

Proceedings OF THE American Society for Psychical Research

SECTION "B" OF THE AMERICAN
INSTITUTE FOR SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

VOL. I. PART II

CONTENTS

| | |
|--|-----|
| A CASE OF CLAIRVOYANCE. By Prof. William James..... | 221 |
| A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES. By G. A. T. :- | |
| Introduction | 227 |
| Author's Narrative | 230 |
| THE MCCAFFREY CASE. By James H. Hyslop. | |
| Introduction | 301 |
| Data and Investigation | 303 |
| Hypnotic Experiments | 388 |
| Conclusion | 417 |
| A CASE OF THE ALLEGED MOVEMENT OF PHYSICAL OBJECTS WITHOUT CONTACT. By James H. Hyslop and Hereward Carrington. | |
| Introduction | 431 |
| Mr. X's Reports | 437 |
| Report of a Personal Investigation Into These Phenomena | 482 |
| Reply to Mr. X's Criticism | 516 |
| BOOK REVIEW | 520 |

SMALL, MAYNARD & CO.
15 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.

PRICE, \$2.00

NOTICES

Communications to the Editor should be addressed to Dr. James H. Hyslop, 519 West 149th St., New York, U. S. A.

Members are desired to report as to facts and personal experiences having an interest for psychology and psychical research, or to contribute to critical discussion of material collected and published on the subjects of concern to the Society. These subjects for which reports regarding facts are asked are Apparitions, Telepathy, Clairvoyance, Premonitions, Mediumistic Phenomena, Visions of the Dying, Coincidences, Illusions, Hallucinations, and all residual phenomena that tend to illustrate obscure mental processes.

All reports and narratives of personal and other experiences will be treated as private and confidential, unless express permission is given to use them and the names connected therewith.

FISCAL YEAR AND MEMBERSHIP.

The fiscal year will begin January 1st of each year and all membership fees will become due at that time. New subscriptions shall become payable on election to membership. All fees paid during the year will entitle the member to enrollment for that year, except after November 1st. Fees paid after November 1st will entitle the member to enrollment for the following year.

Members are requested to send prompt notice of any change of address to the Secretary that there may be neither delay nor loss in the delivery of publications.

Foreign members of the Society may estimate their dues at the rate of £1. 1 s. for every \$5 of subscription fees.

Funds of the Institute, except those loaned on security, are deposited in the United States Trust Company, and can be drawn only on order of the Board of Trustees on the joint signature of its President and Treasurer.



PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
AMERICAN SOCIETY
FOR
PSYCHICAL RESEARCH

A CASE OF CLAIRVOYANCE.

By William James.

The following case of the recovery of the body of a drowned person in consequence of indications given by a clairvoyant, has been entrusted to me for publication by Dr. Harris Kennedy, of Roxbury, a cousin of my wife. It should have been published in 1899. Dr. Kennedy (whose brother was staying at Lebanon at the time the events happened) got the depositions of the witnesses while the case was still hot; and delay has added nothing to the data for our judgment.

I first subjoin the summarized account drawn up by Dr. Kennedy.

Dr. Kennedy's Account.

On Monday, Oct. 31st, 1898, Miss Bertha Huse left her home at Enfield, N. H., at 6 A. M., before the rest of the family had risen. She took her way down the street toward the so-called Shaker Bridge. On her way she was seen by several people, and by one person when she was on the bridge. Her family, learning of her absence, instituted a search for her, and during the greater part of the day 150 men, more or less, hunted the woods and lake shore in that vicinity. This search proving of no avail, Mr. Whitney, a mill owner of Enfield, sent to Boston for divers, with a suitable outfit. A diver named Sullivan worked the better part of all Tuesday, and up to Wednesday noon, without success in the lake.

On Wednesday evening, Nov. 2nd; Mrs. Titus, of Lebanon, N. H., a village about four and one-half miles from Enfield, while dozing after supper, aroused the attention of her husband, who was seated near her, by her noises, and extremely horrified countenance. When he spoke to her, she failed to answer, and it was necessary for him to shake her before arousing her to consciousness. When she was conscious, the first thing she said was, "Why did you disturb me? In a moment I should have found that body." After this she told her husband, "If I behave very peculiarly to-night, or cry out, or seem greatly disturbed, do not on any account awaken me, but leave me to myself." At some time during the night Mr. Titus was aroused by the screams of his wife. He got up, lit a lamp, and waited, obeying his wife's instructions. She, during a following interval, though not awake, spoke in substance as follows:

"She followed the road down to the bridge, and on getting part way across it, stepped out on to that jutting beam which was covered with white frost. There she stood undecided whether to go into the water there or go up over the hill to the pond. While so standing, she slipped on the log, fell backwards, and slid in underneath the timber work of the bridge. You will find her lying, head in, and you will only be able to see one of her rubbers projecting from the timber work."

Early in the morning, at her earnest solicitation, her husband went to Mr. Ayer, an employee of the Mascoma Flannel Co., at Lebanon, and asked him for leave to absent himself from the mill that morning, in order to go with his wife to the Shaker Bridge at Enfield. He then told Mr. Ayer the story, substantially as above. Mr. Titus also told the story to Mr. W. R. Sunderlin, as well as to certain other persons, all in Lebanon, before he went with his wife to Enfield, where he told other parties of this occurrence, and asked Mr. Whitney, who had been foremost in the search, to accompany him and his wife to the spot his wife was desirous of investigating. When they reached the bridge, Mrs. Titus pointed out a certain spot where she said they would find the body in the position as above mentioned. Mr. Whitney,

who was then one of quite a number at the spot, sent a messenger to get the diver who had been working in the neighborhood of that spot on the previous days. On his arrival Mrs. Titus pointed out to him the spot where she said the body lay. He said, "I searched there yesterday, and found nothing." She said, "Yes, you searched *there*, and *there* (pointing to certain spots), but you did not search *there*, and if you go down, you will find only the rubber of her shoe projecting from the timber work." To satisfy her, he put on his diving suit, and went down at the spot indicated. After a moment or two, the bonnet of the deceased rose to the surface, and shortly after the diver came up bringing the body. The diver then said, "I did not look in this place yesterday, as the brush and debris were so thick there that I could not see; in fact, all I could feel of the body, was the rubber, projecting from the timber work."

Mrs. Titus' grandmother is said to have had a similar power in her day, but Mrs. Titus is not known to have made any pretense of being a clairvoyant, having never used her trances for any pecuniary reward, or for the sake of any notoriety. On the day following, viz., Nov. 4th, Mrs. Titus was ill.

Corroborative Statements.

Here follow the statements of several of the persons named in the preceding story. They were written down by Dr. Kennedy from their lips a few days after the occurrences, read by him to them, and signed by them as accurate.

Mr. Ayer's Statement.

On Thursday, A. M., Nov. 3rd, 1898, Mr. George Titus came to the Mascoma Mills. At about 6.15 A. M. he called Mr. J. C. Ayer to one side to tell him the following:

"My wife had three trances last night, in one she caught hold of me, and I tried to pull her away but could not. She then said, 'I know where the girl is. I can find her. The girl went on to the bridge and walked out on a log and then walked back and forth, looking toward the hills. She slipped off and went down backwards. She did not intend

to commit suicide. You will find her in the mud, with one foot out.'"

I, J. C. Ayer, have charge of the mill hands, and know both the sister of the girl, Bertha M. Huse, who was drowned, and Mr. Titus. Both of them worked for me in the mill. This story, which I told Dr. Harris Kennedy on Nov. 10, 1898, is, so far as I know, a correct statement of what was told me by Mr. Titus.

(Signed)

J. C. AYER.

Mr. Sunderlin's Statement.

Testimony in the Titus case, given by W. R. Sunderlin, at Lebanon, N. H., Dec. 1st., 1898. The following is as told by Sunderlin to Henry L. Briggs, Nov. 11th., and corrected by Sunderlin in presence of Sinclair Kennedy, Dec. 1st.:

On the morning of Thursday, Nov. 3rd, Geo. A. Titus, who keeps a horse in my barn, came into my barn about 5:20, and looking about said, "What, are we alone here. I want to tell you something, but I don't want any one to overhear me, and you must say nothing of what I am going to tell you. My wife has had a trance, and declares she can tell where to find the body of Bertha Huse. She says she is in the lake (Mascoma) at the east side of Shaker Bridge."

I naturally laughed at the idea, but Titus stuck to his story. Titus told me that on coming upstairs after supper (he lives in the second story house), he found his wife sitting in a rocking chair, asleep but gesticulating. He aroused her, whereupon she at once said, "O, George, why did you wake me. In a few minutes I could have told you where that girl is. If I go into another trance tonight or any other time, don't disturb me."

They then retired for the night. Along towards 11 or 12, Titus said he was waked by his wife's groans and mutterings. When he lit a lamp, he found his wife in apparent spasms, though still asleep. While so asleep she declared that Bertha Huse would be found in the lake to the east of the bridge, lying head down between two logs, her body covered by mud and brush; but that one foot would be sticking up, on which was a new rubber. That the girl first appeared to her (Mrs.

Titus) on the bridge. That she appeared undecided whether to go in at the spot she was on, or from some point further down the bridge. That while standing on a frost-covered log with her back to the water, her foot slipped, and she went into the lake backwards.

Sunderlin continuing said; "I told Titus, Well, George, if you and your wife feel this way, you better hitch up and go out to the bridge. And if your wife thinks she is then sure of the spot, drive up to Enfield and see if you can get Whitney interested in this."

When Titus came back later in the day, he told me, "When we arrived at the bridge, she got out of the buggy, and walked along the east side of the bridge, looking intently into the lake. Suddenly she stopped, and said, "George, she is right down there, between those two logs." She then got into the buggy, and we drove to Whitney's house.

Mr. Whitney smiled, on hearing the story, but went to the lake with us. My wife went directly to the spot she had pointed out to me, and told Whitney, "She is right down there." As her opinion could not be shaken, Whitney brought the diver. The diver shook his head and said, "I have been down there." My wife said, "No, you have been down there, and there, but not *there*. She is head down in the mud, with one foot sticking up, and a new rubber on it."

The diver turned to Whitney, and said, "I am under your orders, sir." The diver went down at the spot indicated. In a minute the girl's hat came up. Shortly after the diver brought up the body.

(Signed by)

W. R. SUNDERLIN.

In presence of SINCLAIR KENNEDY.

Mr. Titus' Story.

Sunday, Oct. 30th, 1898, Mrs. Titus, of Lebanon, said to her husband, "George, something awful is going to happen. I cannot tell you now what it is, but can later on." Monday, Oct. 31st, just about 6.40 A. M., as Mr. Titus was leaving for the mill, his wife said, "That has happened."

At noon Mr. Titus told his wife that the Huse girl (a

sister of the one drowned) had gone home, Mr. Titus remarking that her mother was perhaps ill, at least so some of the people at the mill thought. She said, "It is something worse, I can feel it."

Monday evening we heard the girl was missing.

Tuesday, Nov. 1st, Mrs. Titus talked about the matter, and said, "That girl is in the lake."

Wednesday, Nov. 2nd, about 7.30 P. M., after having washed her dishes, Mrs. Titus was in the rocking chair. Mr. Titus spoke to her three times in a low tone and the fourth time loudly, and she woke up. "George, why didn't you let me be, in the morning I could have told you where the girl lay and all about it."

She then got up and walked about the house before she went to bed, which was between 8.30 and 9 P. M. After talking a short time, both Mr. and Mrs. Titus fell asleep.

At 11 P. M. (Wednesday) Mr. Titus woke her up. She was talking in her sleep with the diver, and hit her husband, saying, "She is not down there, but over here to the left." She begged her husband to leave her alone.

At 12.15 A. M. (Thursday) she again went into a trance which lasted until one o'clock. Mr. Titus lit a lamp and watched and talked with her in very low tones; when questioned on this subject she would answer, but did not hear about other things.

She said something about cold, and Mr. Titus said, "Are you cold, Nellie?" She said, "Oh, Oh, I am awfully cold." This Mr. Titus said referred to the drowned girl.

After she came out of the trance at one o'clock she told it just as she had it in the trance.

In the morning she said it was her duty to go over to the bridge at Enfield, and Mr. Titus asked Mr. Ayer to let him off, which Mr. Ayer did. Mr. and Mrs. Titus drove in a buggy to Enfield, leaving Lebanon at 7, taking about an hour.

When about 5 or 6 rods on the bridge, Mrs. Titus called out to stop and got out and walked over to a certain spot, and looked over and said, "George, she's down there." "Nellie, are you sure?" She said, "Yes."

Then Mr. and Mrs. Titus drove to Mr. Whitney's house,

where she told her story. Mr. Whitney laughed, but said he would come down.

Mrs. Titus returned to the same spot, and said, "George, she is down there."

Mr. Whitney arrived a few moments later, about 8:30 or 8:45. Mr. Titus called attention to the spot, and Mr. Whitney said, "Walk down the bridge, and see if there is not another place where she is likely to be."

She, Mrs. Titus, walked down a little way, and came back saying, "George, she is right *there*." She explained that she could see the rubber just as plainly as while in her trance the night before.

Mr. Titus says she located the spot in the night, and that he could and did recognize it from her description.

After the diver came up with the body, he said he was not afraid of the woman in the water, but of the one on the bridge.

Mrs. Titus fights against these trances, as she is usually ill for some time after.

The girl walked down to the bridge, and stood wondering whether she would go there or over to the pasture. She slipped and went down between the logs of the bridge. Went down head first, and was buried in the mud, one foot sticking out. Diver said just exactly as *she* said. She knew neither the Huse girl nor was any acquaintance.

Her mother had the power, but wrote. Some days could write nothing, and then again a great deal. Mrs. Titus has no control over the trance which comes on in spite of her efforts to drive it off.

The above story which I told Dr. Harris Kennedy on Nov. 10th, 1898, is, so far as I know, correctly stated.

(Signed) GEORGE N. TITUS.

Mr. Whitney's Letter.

Baltic Mills, Enfield, N. H., Nov. 15th, 1898.

My Dear Sir:

There is very little that I can add to the report which you must have in regard to the finding of the body of Miss Huse.

Mrs. Titus and her husband called at my house the third morning after the disappearance.

Mrs. Titus said she was positive she could locate the body of Miss Huse in the Muscoma Lake. I went down with her and her husband to the bridge, which crosses the lake, should say the bridge was an eighth of a mile long, we walked along on the bridge together, arriving at a point about three-quarters way across the bridge. Mrs. Titus said, this is the place, she pointed to a place in the water where she said the body would be found. We secured the diver, and he went down and located the body exactly as Mrs. Titus had before said. There is really very little that I can add, Mrs. Titus certainly knew nothing about the circumstances, as she had not been in the town for two or three years previous. The diver's name is Sullivan, and he is from the Boston Tow-Boat Co., 89 State Street.

Yours truly,

(Signed)

GEORGE WHITNEY.

Mr. Sullivan's Statement.

On Nov. 21st, 1898, the diver Sullivan was seen by me [H. Kennedy] and the following drawn up after my chat with him. He signed it on Dec. 1st, at the meeting of the Bowditch Club,* at Hotel Nottingham, Boston.

Sullivan's Statement.

Nov. 21st, 1898, Mr. Sullivan, the diver in the Enfield case, was seen, at Simpson's dry dock, in East Boston. Being questioned in regard to the finding of Miss Huse, he told the following story:

"I was employed by the Boston Towboat Co., to search the Mascoma Lake. I went up at 7.10 Monday from Boston, arrived at night, and spent the greater part of Tuesday and Wednesday, Nov. 2nd, from 10 A. M. until 3:10 P. M., in searching along the Shaker Bridge. We had given up the idea of diving, and I telephoned to Boston for powder, intend-

*The Bowditch Club is a group of assistants and younger instructors at the Harvard Medical School, who meet for purposes of professional enlightenment. Dr. Kennedy was at the time such an assistant. W. J.

ing to go down by the early morning train and have the powder meet me at Union Station, and take the next train up, having about 20 minutes in Boston, and return with the powder. In the morning, before I could leave Enfield, Mr. and Mrs. Titus drove over from Lebanon and called on Mr. Whitney. Mr. Titus told Mr. Whitney the story of his wife's trance, and said that altho he did not take much stock in it himself, he felt that on her account he ought to tell Mr. Whitney about it, simply to satisfy his wife. Mr. Whitney laughed, and said that he did not take any stock in it, and at the same time sent for me. We all went to the bridge, and Whitney told me that altho he did not have much faith in it himself, he felt that there might be people in the village who did, and as long as we had started to do all we could to recover the body, we ought at least to give this woman a chance. I said that the villagers up there thought that the missing girl had taken to the woods, and therefore they had had searching parties, while I was dragging the lake; but I told him that I was there, waiting his orders, my business was to find the body, and I was willing to do anything that he said, adding at the same time, that I did not want to be made a fool of by going down in a variety of places that she might point out along the bridge. He said, "No," that she simply would pick out one place, and he thought the least we could do was to go down at the place she picked out, and that would satisfy the villagers.

Mrs. Titus walked along the bridge, and came to a spot and said, "This looks like the spot I saw in my trance," then after a moment's hesitation she said, "No, not exactly," and walked a little way along and stopped at another point, and said, "This looks very much more like the place that I saw last night." She stood there looking over the rail of the bridge from 20 minutes to half an hour. At last she said she was sure that was the place. I asked Mr. Whitney what I should do, and he said I had my suit, and he thought I had better go down in that spot. I took a guide line with sinker, located the spot from the bridge, threw the sinker over some little way from the bridge, as near as possible to the spot she pointed out. I then placed the ladder, and put on my suit,

and went down. Mrs. Titus had told me the body was lying head down, only one foot with a new rubber showing, and lying in a deep hole. I started down the ladder, which extended about five feet under the water. When I swung off the ladder I went sideways and then turned. As I struck the crib work, 10 feet below the ladder, I turned to face the ladder, and my hand struck something. I felt of it, and it felt like a foot. I stopped short where I was:—it is my business to recover bodies in the water, and I am not afraid of them, but in this instance I was afraid of the woman on the bridge. I thought to myself, "How can any woman come from four miles away and tell me or any other man where I would find this body?" I investigated and felt of her foot, and made sure that it was a body. She was lying in a deep hole head down. It was so dark that I could not see anything. I had to feel entirely. I pulled her out, carried her up till I could get the light from above, and then arranged her clothing by laying her out on the crib of the bridge. When I had her laid out on the crib, I reached out for my guide line, but found I could not pull it up. I had to take out my knife and cut it as far as I could reach, and then I tied the line under her arms. The line was simply a clothes line, (6 thread).

I then came up and asked for Mr. Whitney. I said, "She is down there." Mr. Whitney said, "I know it." I thought Mr. Whitney had been convinced pretty strongly. He said it turned out that when I pulled her out of the hole, her hat came off and rose to the surface, and Martin, who worked the pump for me, came near getting into trouble by being pushed off the bridge when the hat appeared on the surface, because the people rushed for the side of the bridge. Fortunately he was not pushed off.

We had a man there in a little skiff, who pulled her up. Mr. Whitney asked me what I thought of it, and I told him I did not think, I was *stunned*.

There are two statements which Mrs. Titus made that are absolutely correct. She located the place where I was to go down; also told me that the body was lying, head in, in a deep hole, with one foot sticking up, with a new rubber. I was down in about 18 feet of water. It was so dark, nobody

could see anything down there. She must have seen the body as it was lying, because she described the position, and she had already pointed out the place I was to go down, and nobody could have known who had not seen the body as it was lying on the bottom. If you ask me how she knew it, I don't know; but if you ask me if I believe in it, why, I have been convinced against my will. If my best friend had told me, I should have thought he had seen a ghost. But if I ever have a similar case and can't find the body, I shall introduce the parties to Mrs. Titus, and she will find it.

(Signea) MICHAEL J. SULLIVAN.

Witnesses:

Alfred Schaper,
E. W. Taylor,
Geo. Burgess Magrath,
E. A. Woods,

Maynard Ladd,
M. A. Potter,
Allen H. Cleghorn,
Harris Kennedy,

Langdon Frothingham,
Alfred W. Balch,
Henry E. Hewes,
William James.

Mr. Sullivan was cross examined at the Bowditch Society meeting, where, his story being read to him, he confirmed it, in the presence of the witnesses whose names are signed above. I add some details from the stenographic notes taken on that evening, and from additional information there given by Dr. Kennedy.

The bridge was a straggling structure between an eighth and a quarter of a mile long, originally made by building cribs on the ice. These sank when the ice melted, and were joined by timber. Hardly any current exists; the water is dark, and great quantities of debris and brush have collected in and about the crib work. It was absolutely impossible to see from above either the body, or the place where the body lay. The detail of the Indian rubber shoe (though it adds to the impressiveness of the narration) is unimportant evidentially. Dr. Kennedy says—"The girl was called by her parents at about eight o'clock on the Monday morning. She had been feeling poorly and they had let her sleep. They found she had gone and had taken her rubbers."

At half past 6 on that morning it appears that "the blacksmith's wife," who was in a position to see the bridge, saw a woman upon it. This blacksmith's wife was not interviewed by Dr. Kennedy. The diver had spoken with her. This is what he reports.

Q. Was she an intelligent sort of woman?

A. She seemed so.

Q. She didn't say she saw the woman fall over?

A. No; she said she saw her on the bridge, or thought it was her. She saw some woman there. That was all she could say.

Critical Remarks.

The scientific interpretation of the case is three-fold:—

I. *The footprint theory.* It appears that there was a light frost on the fatal Monday morning, and that the footprints of the girl were traced from her house to the bridge and thereupon to a distance unrecorded. One of the gentlemen at the Bowditch Club said: "I think that the case is tremendously weakened by the fact that those footprints were seen, and by the fact that people saw her on the bridge. If you can prove that she was seen at a certain point on the bridge before she disappeared, it is not a difficult coincidence to imagine that she fell in at a certain point; and that would surely have been described to Mrs. Titus. It is conceivable that the woman who saw her on the bridge, knew Mrs. Titus. Some people have a power of observation which others have not. Mrs. Titus, with a particularly acute power of observation, might have learned something which others did not."

If this means that footprints and the blacksmith's wife furnished to Mrs. Titus data which the latter's acute powers, either of imagination or observation, completed into an accurate vision of the corpse's position in the water, it seems almost as great a mental miracle as "clairvoyance." The footprints had evidently not led to any spot on the bridge that suggested the girl's having stopped there, for the whole town, knowing of them and in spite of them, was searching the woods; and if they had even indicated one side of the bridge as the more probable side, why should the diver have been allowed to search *both sides, as he did on the Tuesday and Wednesday?* When asked whether he could go back now, and pick out the spot on the bridge where the girl fell off, the diver replied: "I don't think I could pick out that spot."

The following questions and answers are from his cross examination.

Q. How should you know that spot from the one next to it?

A. If there wasn't anything connected with it, I could not pick it out, hardly.

If the diver, who had been there, felt so uncertain, it seems still less likely that Mrs. Titus could have accurately found the spot by a bare hearsay description.

2. This leads to the second naturalistic theory:—*Mrs. Titus may have witnessed the accident.* Like the blacksmith's wife, she may have happened to be near the bridge at the fatal hour, and seen what happened. She then probably went home, and with her husband's complicity worked up the trance story, and on Thursday morning pointed out the spot. The husband's alibi of her would necessarily then be false, and would prove him an accomplice on this theory. Mr. Sullivan's remark on having it propounded was, "Yes, but how could she then know the *exact position of the body on the bottom?*"

Another point against this theory is the odd delay until Thursday morning. Why should Mrs. Titus, if she had a perverse desire to win fame as a clairvoyant, have given the diver two free days in which to find the body unaided.

3. Finally, Bertha Huse, intending to commit suicide, might have confided the *intention and the mode of execution to Mrs. Titus, either directly* or through her sister, who, it appears, worked at Lebanon, and was probably known to Mrs. Titus. This third hypothesis is psychologically even more improbable than the two others. Against all three of these explanations, stands the fact of the precision of the clairvoyant's direction to the diver. Here are some passages from the latter's cross-examination:—

Q. You think that Mrs. Titus pointed to almost the exact spot where the body was found?

A. I know she did. If it wasn't for her, the body would not have been found.

Q. You say it was too dark for you to see?

A. It was total darkness. It is light water, but the crib work cuts off the light.

Again:—

Q. You found her with her head down and feet up in almost the exact spot Mrs. Titus indicated?

A. I might say to an inch.

Mr. Sullivan's mind seems to have been quite "stunned," as he expressed it, by the uncanniness of such an exact and immediate verification. "When I put out my hand it came up against something that felt like a foot." . . . "If I had come across the body the day before, or the first day I was there, I would have thought nothing of it. I would say, 'All right for Boston tonight, I guess.' But when I came across her, and felt out what it was, it did actually stun me, and in place of paying attention to the body, I did so to the woman overhead, that picked out the spot, and the way she said it lay. . . . I thought of that, about this Mrs. Titus! I said I never believed in anything like that! Then I commenced to haul her up after I settled that part of it. I had been positive I would not find the body. I had been mad because I would have to go down because of this woman saying, 'there is the spot where the body is.'"

It was evident that the exactness of the description was the striking thing for Sullivan. He was interrogated as to whether the position of the body tallied with Mrs. Titus' account of the way the girl fell over backwards. The body stood vertically, head downwards, in a hole in the cribwork. He thought that a sudden dive backwards was the best explanation of its being caught thus. "She was lying feet up and head down. She was straight up and down." "I take it a woman drowning herself, jumping over feet first, the air would get under her clothes, and she would drift around a little ways; . . . but if a woman goes backwards, she will settle quicker." "Bodies that have drifted, as a general thing, lie horizontal."

It was plain enough that *neither of these three naturalistic explanations has the least plausibility.* A reader to whom the

hypothesis of clairvoyance is impossible, had far better explain the case as a very exceptional one of accidental coincidence. I should unhesitatingly do this myself were cognate cases *rarissimi*. But the records of supernormal seership of various types and grades which the Proceedings of the S. P. R. are more and more abundantly publishing, make, it seems to me, the scientific '*non-possumus*' absurd. There is an almost identical case for instance, in Vol. xi, p. 383 ff., where the corpses of two drowned boys named Mason, were found in Cochihuate Lake, near Natick, Mass., through directions given by a Boston clairvoyant named Mrs. York. See also a similar case on p. 389 of the same volume.

My own view of the Titus case consequently is that it is *a decidedly solid document in favor of the admission of a supernormal faculty of seership*—whatever preciser meaning may later come to be attached to such a phrase.

I conclude by appending a notice that appeared in the Granite State Free Press, of Lebanon, N. H., on Friday, November 11th, 1898, and a letter from a sister of the drowned girl, received by me quite recently.

"Card.

"The people of Enfield and adjoining towns, who so spontaneously came to our relief and assistance by words of sympathy and kindly and generous acts during the long days and nights of terrible anxiety and suspense, attending search for our dear daughter, sister, and niece; to that kind-hearted man, George E. Whitney, who so generously contributed assistance by personal effort and otherwise; to Mrs. Titus, who voluntarily came to our assistance when all means and efforts had failed, and by the exercise of a, to us mysterious but we believe a God-given power, designated the place where the body could be found and where it was found; to the funeral director, the bearers and singers; to the friends who came from a distance to attend the funeral; and to those who contributed the beautiful flowers; we wish hereby to express to each and all, our deep sense of gratitude and heart-

felt thanks for this manifestation of their friendship. The memory of this will always be treasured by us.

(Signed) MR. & MRS. EDWIN E. HUSE.
LEONA E. HUSE.
MR. & MRS. GUY E. HUSE.
MR. & MRS. L. D. DUNBAR."

Enfield, N. H., April 2nd, 1907.

Professor William James,
Cambridge, Mass.

Dear Sir:—

In reply to your letter of recent date received by my mother, I will simply say—we have never had any reason to doubt that the facts of the case you referred to were correctly stated in the papers at the time of the accident.

We do not attempt to explain Mrs. Titus' part in it, but do know she performed a wonderful act for us, for which we shall always be very thankful. We have no reason to doubt either Mr. or Mrs. Titus' statements in regard to it.

In regard to your criticisms, am quite sure if you had been here you would not have advanced them.

We have not seen Mrs. Titus for several years, so can tell you nothing about her.

I judge by your letter that you have the facts of the case, so you will excuse me if I write nothing more—as it is far from pleasant to talk or write about what is to us a great sorrow.

Very truly,

MRS. H. BARROW,
For Mrs. Edwin E. Huse.

A RECORD OF EXPERIENCES.

By G. A. T.

I. Introduction.

The following record of experiences might be left to tell its own story in most circumstances, and I think it may be interesting to all really critical students. But many will want to ask about the qualifications of the reporter to observe and record his facts. Consequently care was taken to give references of persons who might attest the gentleman's reliability in reporting such things as this record involves. I received from the gentleman a large list of men who are among the well known and intelligent people in the United States. They are of one mind in regard to Mr. T. in the matter of his intelligence and veracity, and I think the record itself would show this without independent references. But it will please readers to know that an unusual number of intelligent men vouch for qualifications in the gentleman which makes his narrative noticeable. I am obliged to treat the testimony of Mr. T's friends confidentially, but it is of the highest, and no one ventures to do anything more than to accuse his imagination as the source of the incidents reported. But I find that this verdict usually comes from people who cannot distinguish between the occurrence of a human experience and some explanation of it which is not easily acceptable. They accept the entire veracity of the gentleman, and that is all the really scientific man desires in the report of experiences. The explanation can be left to take care of itself, and I think Mr. T's cautiousness and critical spirit are sufficient to absolve him from the accusation of credulity, as it is clear that he lays no such stress on any theory as he does on the occurrence of his sensations. The narrative shows an honest pursuit of truth and a desire to exhaust the ordinary explanations of illusion and hallucination in the most difficult incidents of his experience, while there are associated with them the occurrence of others whose credentials are so well established that there is no longer any *a priori* reason for doubting them.

There is one passage in Mr. T's record which he asked me to suppress, out of deference to the feelings of one person who might misunderstand it. I am very sorry to comply with this request, since the view which he takes of a certain incident as possibly telling against the hypothesis of the supernormal would appeal so forcibly to the sceptic that it would protect him against criticism. I myself doubt if his sceptical view is the correct one under the circumstances, and it is possible that Mr. T. would agree with me in that doubt. But he wished to frankly recognize the difficulties which the supernormal had to contend with, and stated the possibilities of the normal interpretation in protection of his own judgment. I wish very much that it could have been retained in the published record, as it is in the private one. But I think him quite right in asking that it be reserved to avoid misunderstanding of one personally interested.

I have retained in Mr. T's letters some things which are irrelevant to the matters here discussed, but they are such good evidence of his intelligence and fitness to record and discuss the problems of psychical research that there would be no excuse for omitting them.

It is because of the peculiarly complex nature of these experiences that this paper has been published. In the present stage of psychic research it is not desirable to separate the different types of phenomena if they are actually associated in time and space with each other. If automatic writing, apparitions, crystal visions, and raps were never associated, each with any other the others, it would be quite a different thing. It has often been apparent that even isolated phenomena of the kind suggested a nearer or remoter connection with each other. But rarely do we find a single case reflecting the definite and psychological association with each other. The fact indicates more or less an explanation involving the same ultimate cause whatever the subsidiary hypothesis may be to account for the differences. We cannot pretend here to have supplied adequate evidence in this instance alone of what this ultimate explanation may be, and it is not necessary, in the present stage of the investigation, to treat the instance as evidence by itself sufficient

to suggest more than the propriety of careful inquiry. But its merits are such as to challenge investigation and to serve as one incident in a collective mass of facts which will lead somewhere. That is all that the author would claim for the account, and it is a sufficient explanation of its importance. With this introduction I leave the record to readers and students, who must not treat it as proof of a large theory, but as one instance of data which require further additions to their mass and which illustrate human experiences that have been too long laughed out of court.

There is another important reason for publishing the present case. It is a very good example of how to observe and record one's experience and still more of what may occur to almost any individual who may happen to be interested in the subject. I do not think that every one would be so fortunate as the author in his experiences, as the circumstances might not admit of the production of the phenomena, owing to causes we cannot explain. But here we have the sudden appearance of most suggestive experiences incident to the interest evoked by reading books on psychic research and which, perhaps, would never have occurred but for the persistent effort aroused by this curiosity. It will be noticed that nearly all of them occurred within a year from the time when the interest arose. The records were made at once, and we have all that observation within the limits of the witness's opportunities would permit. If every individual were as painstaking in his treatment of his experiences the work would not lack for the facts to justify its existence.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.

II. Author's Narrative.

July 25th, 1906.

Prof. James H. Hyslop:

Dear Sir:—I have just finished your volume, "Enigmas of Psychical Research," and have found it intensely interesting. What you have to say about the physical phenomena of mediumship is of especial interest to me because I have been experimenting since last October. Some peculiar per-

sonal experiences have led me to read the literature on the subject, and the development of certain small mediumistic powers in my own person, has permitted me to experiment to a limited extent. I have kept brief records made at the time of the experiences or within twenty-four hours. So far as I can be certain of my own sensations, "raps" are produced at any point within fifteen feet of my person, five feet being the usual or about the average distance, judging as accurately as I can. In a majority of cases they come unexpectedly and as they are sometimes heard by others, I am not inclined to regard them as hallucinations. They are the product of some intelligence, for they will sometimes answer questions by using a code of signals. It is sometimes a mischievous intelligence and sometimes not. I am only sure of one thing, that is, if the raps are made by the subliminal self, it must be done by a hypothetic nerve force which as some investigator has suggested may have existed and been useful before the development of limbs. I realize that that sounds foolish enough to deserve Mr. Podmore's sarcastic comments, but it serves to illustrate the position you take, apart from the idea of the raps being hallucinations. I was particularly interested in your book, "Science and a Future Life." I don't see how any one can read it without coming to a stronger conviction of the fact of survival than you express.

Very truly yours,

GEORGE A. T——.

P. S. As I have ventured to intrude on you I'll add a word as to the nature of these manifestations which inclines me to believe in their independent origin. While writing the last sentence of my letter, there came several raps near me. That sort of thing happens at irregular intervals of a few days or weeks. It does not occur often enough for me to expect it; and as it comes when I am absorbed, you can see my reason for thinking it to be some independent intelligence, assuming that I am not deceived as to the fact of the sounds. These raps generally come when I am thinking of some personal matter or of some question connected with my desire to learn about problems in psychical research—

Mr. Podmore would dub that an amiable form of manifestation, I reckon. I think that it is myself. I won't apologize for writing of this little matter; and if it should happen that you find it of even the most trifling interest I think that I can safely assure you that there are people in Massachusetts whom you would be inclined to believe that would vouch for my intelligence and honesty in making any investigation of ordinary affairs, though perhaps they would draw the line at psychical research. What very slight powers of mediumship I possess are of the type which you denominate as subliminal. I have occasionally heard the sound of bells; have experienced what Mr. Myers describes as the cataplasm of touching; have seen an apparition occasionally, one being of myself; have been successful in sending a very few messages telepathically from this Willamette Valley to a cousin in Salt Lake City. I can get automatic writing but as a rule believe it to be the work of the secondary personality, and I can't prove that it is not always that entirely.

G. A. T.

Aug. 21st, 1906.

Prof. James H. Hyslop,
New York City.

Dear Sir:—Thank you much for your letter of 4th inst. I shall be glad to write as careful an account as I can of my experiences and experiments within the next sixty days, barring the unexpected. I can give at least twenty-five good references, but I warn you I have been disabled physically for over twenty years and I suppose that there are people who consider my disability as imaginary and probably all consider it nervous. That is almost enough to disqualify me, isn't it? However, as one old friend, a Doctor, used to say that apparently my brain was not affected, and as I have received marks of confidence in my honesty and ability, I'll make the venture. I have endeavored to accept my disability as a discipline.

I believe that I am recovering as result of treatment prescribed by a physician who died fifteen years ago, though you are the first person to whom I have mentioned the fact ex-

cept my mother and brother. It has happened that the public library has bought your last two books on psychical research on my recommendation. I go to the library often and rarely see the books on the shelves, which is an indication of interest.

For the last few weeks I have been reading with great interest your "Elements of Ethics." The chapter on the freedom of the will, nature and origin of conscience and morality and religion seems to me to be very fine as well as conclusive. I'll admit that Darwin's "Social instinct" idea as set forth in his "Descent of Man," and Spenser's self-love origin of good conduct as outlined in his "Date of Ethics," used to be satisfactorily conclusive to me, but your arguments are too good and too kindly reasonable to leave me where I was. Your suggestion that freedom of will varies with individuals and that responsibility varies even more widely, is worth a good deal to me.

I have had a concrete case of what is called hypocrisy to deal with, and I am wondering how you would define the term. Good will seems to be overwhelming, but is responsibility lacking? The individual has been known to admit inconsistency, though rather as an appeal for sympathy. He might be described as a creature of impulse, and while he has the largest and most unselfish set of emotions I ever knew, they seem to exist for revenue of praise and sympathy mostly, though they seem to him to justify conduct which an ordinary man would expect to be kicked for. The good will and ego blinds or destroys the moral sense somehow. Does that constitute hypocrisy? If so it seems to me that hypocrites are not fully responsible, if your charitable conclusions are correct. It's absurd to assume that a hypocrite knows what he is, I think, for he will arraign another savagely for the same kind of offenses that he commits himself. Pardon this length, but I would like to know if you consider a hypocrite lacking in responsibility—defective, if you please. If you don't object to answering in ten words, or one on postal enclosed I shall be under obligations to you.

Very truly yours,

G. A. T.

P. S. Dickens intimates that Pecksniff knew he was a hypocrite and that Skimpole (perhaps), escaped that knowledge by disclaiming responsibility. Uriah Heep also was a self-confessed hypocrite; and that seems to be the general opinion that genuine hypocrisy is willful in the sense of being known by the one showing it. I have come to believe that the actor don't know and generally can't be taught, or in other words that he is defective and must be guarded against. As the story-writer describing a jealous ape of Sumatra which had been tamed and trained, said, "He has too much ego in his cosmos." Is that a safe position to take? I can't ask for more than yes or no from you.

G. A. T.

[The narrative begins with the account of two friends of Mr. T., and represents the beginning of the experiments. The interesting feature of it is the association of raps with planchette writing. The account is signed by the four persons present, and Mr. T. corroborates it as having been told him soon after the occurrence of the incidents.—Editor.]

My mother, who is 68 years of age, was reclining beside her sister on the bed in a tent. They were lying facing each other, mother with her head against the footboard when my sister and I entered the tent and we began talking of spirit manifestations which we had read. I had for some time been doubtful on phases of the subject, and I made the remark that if there were such things as spirit communications with mortals it seemed to me one ought to be really good in every way to be worthy of or capable of mediumistic power and laughingly added that mother and auntie were so good why not get the planchette and maybe we would get some message right there. When I returned with planchette I remarked (with a good deal of faith), "I believe we will get something just because mother and auntie are here," and just then there came three distinct raps at the foot of the bed at mother's head. Mother started up and asked auntie, "Is that your feet?" but we saw that her feet were not near the footboard. Auntie nodded a negative answer and mother asked, "Is that you, Margaret?" when, as if in answer, there came

one distinct rap on the box where planchette was. Instinctively Mary and I placed our fingers lightly on planchette and it wrote the word father. I asked, "Have you a message for mother?" and it wrote, "The same in Jesus forever, father." It was mother's, Mary's and my first experience of the kind and we were much impressed. Would like to comment on the fact that at dinner we were joking mother about her "old fashioned religion," so it seemed a message from papa to mother direct. The writings we received from planchette on Aug. 12th, 1906, about 6 P. M.

ELIZABETH ADELINE D.

August 22nd, 1906.

I was present and heard the raps on the footboard at the time mentioned.

N. A. W. T.

Aug. 22nd, 1906.

Four ladies were in a tent, two on the bed, two sitting near a box on which was a planchette. They were discussing spirit manifestations. One said, "Let us try the planchette, I believe we could get a message right here." Just then there came three raps near the head of one of the ladies on the bed, immediately followed by one distinct rap on the box. The two ladies near the box at once touched the planchette, which instantly wrote, "Father." And soon afterward wrote, "Write for me, the same in Jesus forever, Father."

This occurred on Sunday, August 12th, 1906, between 6 and 7 o'clock P. M. I was one of the ladies sitting near the box. These are the only distinct raps I ever heard.

MARY S.

I was one of the ladies, and heard the raps distinctly.

MRS. ELLEN S.

I was not present on the occasion described in the accounts of Mary D. S. and her sister Elizabeth, but I came home soon after and was told of raps being heard. That account coincided with these written accounts. My mother (Mrs. T....) believes in the presence and attempted communications of discarnate spirits, but her sister's family

have not been interested until very recently in even considering the question. The name Margaret, used by my mother, is that of her deceased daughter (my sister). The communication purporting to come from the father is on that supposition from Edward T. S...., deceased husband of Mrs. Ellen S.... and father of Mary and Elizabeth. He was at one time a Baptist minister.

GEORGE A. T——.

Oct. 2nd, 1906.

During the past winter on several mornings in succession about daylight, I saw in my room, on the ceiling, a number of discs of white light coming and going. They were about the size of a silver dollar.

N. A. W. T——.

[The following report of Mr. T. is in response to my request that he give me a detailed account of the experiences to which he had alluded in his earlier correspondence.—Editor.]

Sept. 6th, 1906.

Prof. James H. Hyslop,
New York City.

Dear Sir:—In your letter of Aug. 4th you invite me to write you as full and detailed an account of certain apparitions and experiences which I have had. You also suggest that I give you a complete history of the events which led up to my trial of experiments.

I am 45 years old and for 22 years I have been partially disabled, and in consequence have been practically retired. The trouble has probably been a slight displacement of one of the lumbar vertebrae which has made it impossible for me to walk any distance or to sit up more than an hour or two at a time, and has caused certain functional disturbances mostly of the digestive system. At any rate, whatever the cause, my disabilities have been of the nature I mention, and my nervous system has been debilitated. I have never used stimulants or narcotics as a regular thing, except a very limited allowance of tobacco, which I smoke. The idea of submit-

ting to such an abnormal existence has been horrible, so I have struggled to live as other men do, barring my physical limitations. While I am not the best judge, of course I believe I have succeeded in keeping in touch in a sane fashion with normal human interests. I have edited (for the owner) a country weekly, and have contributed occasionally to Sunday newspapers such as the Chicago Tribune, Pittsburgh Dispatch, Press and Times, Baltimore American, and had a brief article on the question printed in the Forum and one on the in a recent number of the Outlook. I have attended to the settling of two estates in the probate court of County, M. . . . , in one as the agent of the executrix and in the other as administrator, drawing up all papers and conveyances myself. (I was educated for the law.) As administrator I had two neighbors go on my bond for twenty thousand dollars without any security, and apparently they did it cheerfully and without any hesitation. I have been almost constantly busy and have taken responsibilities (some of which were foolish) which have imposed severe mental strain. I have had what at times seemed to be cruel nervous suffering, but for the greater part of the time I am free from that affliction. For a number of years I have been something of a student of American History, or rather United States History, which I took up as a means of getting a good knowledge of our economic system in its various branches.

During the past year I have been reading with a good deal of care some thirty volumes on psychical research and psychology. I make no apology for this account, because my physical and nervous condition has been abnormal for over twenty years. Psychologists like Prof. Jastrow take the ground that whatever jars the human machine like illness or bereavement, not only interferes with the normal critical faculty which permits a man to perceive his own mental processes in their true perspective, but as a consequence of that lack of balance makes him unfit to investigate what are described as Spiritualistic phenomena. There is so much to be said in favor of that contention that nothing short of proof of a normal mind can save such an one's testimony from be-

ing thrown out as untrustworthy, unless it happens to be corroborated. It is easy for me to indulge in day dreams, but I don't often permit myself that dissipation, though I often experience the first stages of it. My imagination is strong, but I don't often get away from my facts; and when I do I remember it a long time with humiliation. With this preliminary confession I will say that I have always been intensely interested in the occult, which when I was a boy made me delight in Bulwer's novels.

In 1883 I was making a call on a young woman in Washington, when the conversation turned to the subject of the work of the Society for Psychical Research. I said that I had seen a ghost that summer, and there were several people present who urged me to tell them about it. I did so, but I became so embarrassed at the way the company regarded me that I never alluded to the matter again until within the past year. In 1892 I talked with a young woman from New Hampshire and she told me that she had known of mediums who foretold future events. I could not believe it, but it made an impression on me because I considered the woman as entirely trustworthy.

In August of that year my sister Margaret died at the age of 23 after a prolonged illness. She was devoutly religious but she said to me that she was much troubled because she knew that I did not believe in any future life. I felt much distressed that I should have unsettled her faith. The night that she died I had gone to sleep in my room but wakened just before midnight with the strong impression that I must talk with her. I dressed and went to her room and told her how sorry I was that I had disturbed her faith. I said that we came here without any wish of our own and that when we went that power that brought us to life must take us again. That seemed reasonable and logical and she said that she had never thought of that and she thanked me and expressed herself as comforted. She died three hours later. We knew that she could not live long, but did not expect her death that night. It is natural that I should have regarded that impulse to get up and dress at midnight to talk with my sister as a premonition or as something of that

nature. My sister Lizzie, who lived in Minn. (we were in Maryland) wrote that she knew that morning that Margaret was gone from us. That seemed very strange and we all remembered it. In the course of the following year on two occasions, I think, I had the feeling that my sister, Margaret, was with me and that we could exchange thoughts. I did not see her but I had a very vivid idea of how she looked. I decided that the experiences were imaginary and they did not recur for several years. Before coming to from Minnesota in 1903, I had such a presentiment of evil that I was extremely depressed, but I had promised to come. My presentiment was vindicated with a good deal to spare, and I then began to consider the question seriously. Several reviews of Mr. Myers' book and an interview of a newspaper writer with A. R. Wallace inclined me to think that there might be such things as spirit communications, especially as an ancestor of mine had an experience which is related by Cotton Mather, and which is an interesting family record. This ancestor, Thomas T., refused to sail with his friends and kinsman in the *Primace*, which was wrecked on what is now known as Thacher's Island, off the Mass. coast, because of an overwhelming presentiment of evil. Of 23 people, 21 were drowned. Young Thomas, (aged 15) walked from Ipswich to Marblehead rather than embark. That happened in 1635. The story of the wreck has been printed in the *New England Magazine* from the account of Anthony T., who survived the wreck with his wife; and Whittier has told of the death of Anthony's friend in the short poem, "The Swan Song of Parson Avery."

Two years ago, while in Albany,, I read a book on telepathy by Wm. Walker Atkinson and one day one of my cousins at the dinner table finished a sentence that I had begun and insisted that I had said it and that she repeated it. I began a question to my aunt, but was interrupted and dropped it as of no particular importance. It was a curious thing, and I proposed to one of my cousins in Salt Lake City to send her telepathic messages. My question (which I did not finish) to my aunt was, "Have you ever been"—I wrote my cousin I would try to send her telepathically the name of

a town which was Sodaville. She wrote that she could not get the name, but she thought it begun with S." I then tried to suggest the name of a book in a list of about 50 which I had told her about a month before. I selected the "Witch of Prague," and she got it correctly. I then tried to suggest to her "A Century of American Diplomacy," and she wrote that she thought I meant "Wandering Jew." I dropped the experiments because I thought they were exhausting.

A little more than a year ago I saw an apparition of my father and he said a few words to me though not in an audible voice. There was the sense of the words being said and they made a deep impression on me, but there was no sound. In October of last year I was talking with a friend about spirit communications and she told me in confidence of a friend of hers who is a remarkable medium. This friend called that evening, as it happened, and at my request gave a sitting. I received two messages purporting to be from my father and a young woman friend, and they were so characteristic of the two people that it impressed me much. The medium and I were strangers and had lived 1,500 miles apart and had no mutual friends—the friend who introduced me being a friendly acquaintance of a few weeks only. This lady is not a public medium, and her husband has a morbid fear that she may be generally known as a medium.

A month later after my new friend had returned to her home city and the medium as well, my friend wrote me in response to certain questions I had asked about my future prospects (assuming that my former presentiment of evil had a supernormal source) that a most intimate friend of hers now (deceased) was a doctor, and he assured her through this medium that I had injured my spine and disturbed the spinal cord and that if I would go to an osteopath and have my back stretched and manipulated I would recover. As my disability began with a strain of my spine the diagnosis seemed reasonable. All the physicians I ever employed declared the trouble was a nervous one and could do nothing for it except to make me uncomfortable in mind and body. I acted on the advice so curiously obtained, consoling myself with the reflection that the intelligence claiming to be a de-

parted spirit could not show any greater ignorance than some 15 physicians of good standing whom I had consulted. As the result of treatment for about 90 days I am now better than I have been for 20 years, though I am not well by any means. My back has been relieved and I can sit up for several hours at a time and can walk a mile without cane or crutches. The 21st of August I sat up and walked about five hours without a rest. I went to Forepaugh's Circus that day. I experienced much discomfort in getting fatigued, but I recovered in a few days. The point is that I can do things I could not do for many years. I used to get about by lying down in a wagon and having a driver, and on the cars by lying in a berth, but now I can go for short distances as other people do.

I have tried the so-called suggestion treatment. It helped up to a certain point and then I was up against a wall; and I have made myself ill for ten days by trying to do things beyond my powers. It is natural of course that I should regard my last diagnosis as probably correct, whatever its source. This medium may be clairvoyant, though so far as I know she has no knowledge of medicine or anatomy. She is a quiet, domestic woman, has been twice married and has several children. She and my friend claim to get their communications by means of direct voice with the aid of an aluminum trumpet, sitting in a darkened room. They do it simply for their own satisfaction, so the motive for fraud does not exist and as they went into it to investigate or rather to try every means to see if my friend's friends were anywhere in existence outside of our physical life, the only explanation outside of accepting the facts as stated is an amount of self-delusion that is hard to believe in people who ordinarily are reckoned normal. I have been invited to go to their meetings together, but as it would cost me \$100.00 about, to make the journey I have had to decline. They are good respectable people, some of them church members, and they are anxious to keep it quiet that they communicate with discarnate spirits.

Last October I began to read the literature of psychical research, beginning with Mr. Myers' "Human Personality,"

Mr. Savage's "Life Beyond Death," and your "Science and a Future Life," and Mr. Podmore's books. I found Josiah Royce's elementary work on psychology very helpful. I also tried to get automatic writing, but did not succeed for six weeks, though I could apparently exchange thought with my sister M. I did succeed after some trials in getting automatic writing and in getting raps, sitting with my mother. The raps also came in my room at unexpected times. Before giving an account of experiments I will copy an account I made last June of certain apparitions I have seen. I wrote the account from memory for my own satisfaction. Such memories are not the best possible evidence, but as the occurrences were simple and as I have not talked about them (except as mentioned on another page) there is no reason to suppose that memory has played any tricks.

The first apparition appeared to me in Washington, D. C., where I was employed as a clerk in the Ordinance Office of the War Dep't. I had been attending lectures in the law school of the Columbian University for two years—evening lectures. In the summer of 1883, in, I think, the month of June, I was wakened in the night, and looking toward the bay window, the inside blinds of which were only half closed, I distinctly saw the face and figure of a young woman. Her body was partly concealed by the back of a heavy rocking chair. I had wakened suddenly, wide awake, which was an unusual thing, as I was a good sleeper. The reality of the appearance and the impossibility of a woman being there, gave me a feeling of awe even more than surprise. After looking at her for some seconds, possibly ten, and certainly as many as five, I raised myself to a sitting posture in bed and looked intently at the woman. As I looked she seemed to sink down gradually behind the chair. After she had entirely disappeared I sank back into the reclining position, but as soon as I had touched my pillow she appeared again in the same place. I got out of bed immediately, but the figure disappeared as before. I threw the blinds wide open, and searched the room, but found nothing of any woman. My room was on the second floor and the door into the hall was always locked

at night. The time was after midnight as I remember. The house was a new one and rooms were rented to lodgers by the month. It was on I Street between Ninth and Tenth, N. W.—909 was the number I think. The face was not familiar to me, but seemed to be gazing intently at me.

It is now three months since I wrote the above account of a happening when I was twenty-three years old. There is one criticism of my own account to be made and that is that I doubt if I remembered opening the blinds wide. Very possibly I did, for I certainly looked for the woman. There is also another word to be said of the room. It was one of a suite of two opening into each other. A friend rented the suite with me, but he was in Georgetown, Ohio, at that time, where his father was at the point of death, and I was sleeping in his room.

The second apparition was my own fifteen years later. Early in December, 1898, while I was in very miserable health I went from Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, to Little Falls, Minnesota. I took a Pullman and fell asleep in my berth early in the evening while the car was still well lighted. I awakened suddenly and with a start. I saw what appeared to be myself lying beside me in the berth. It caused me a most distressing sensation, but as soon as the figure or apparition disappeared, which was very soon, I felt relieved though I felt a repugnance to going to sleep again for fear it would happen again. I remember that I was on the edge of the berth near the aisle lying on my right side. I was very unwell and as completely discouraged and unhappy as I have ever been in my life. I was also very much exhausted physically and emotionally from getting ready for the journey and bidding a friend goodbye whom I could hardly hope to see again.

The third apparition appeared a year ago. In July of 1905 while living in Albany, . . . , I was lying in my room on the bed one afternoon when I saw the face and part of the figure of my father (who died in October, 1885) at the foot of my bed. I saw him as distinctly as I saw the woman mentioned in the first memorandum. He said to me, "You are

a good and faithful son," and soon faded from sight. The last years of my father's life he was much emaciated and my recollection of him was that of a man in good flesh of about fifty. He died in his sixty-first year.

Last September (one year ago), I was strongly tempted to do a certain thing but the doing of it would disappoint a dear friend, and it might have been considered a breach of faith. One day, I had almost decided to do it anyway and was picturing to myself the advantages, when I suddenly beheld my friend's face at a distance of five or six feet, looking at me with a most reproachful expression. My first and second experiences were not only unexpected and unsought, but I was roused from sleep to witness them. The third came in the day time, and but for my nervous and harassed condition and the painful experience of the previous two years (which may have caused the hallucination) I should consider in the same class as the others—whatever that may be. The youthfulness of the apparition may be considered proof of that theory (a certain objective reality perhaps) or it may merely indicate an older subliminal memory. The last experience seems to be a clear case of purely subjective hallucination unless it may be classed among apparitions of the living. This friend knew nothing of my temptation, as I remember the circumstances, so there is no ground for that theory. I was thinking intently of the plan of action at the moment the apparition appeared. In the third experience I was in a state of repose as complete as was compatible with my being awake.

To return to my experiments. My mother and I sat occasionally to get raps with more or less success and they came occasionally—sometimes often—when we were not thinking of the matter. Aside from automatic writings I made no records until November 17th, 1905. A few nights before that I was awakened out of a sound sleep by a loud sound of a bell in my room. The thing made such an impression on my sleepy senses that I got up and searched my room to find the cause of the sound. I learned nothing by my search. I mentioned the matter as curious to my mother (she lived

in another house a block away) and the next night she said she was awakened by a bell but she heard it twice, the second time faintly. It startled her a good deal. I shall copy the record made December 12th, 1905, at noon.

"About half-past nine last night, before I went to sleep, I heard a soft clear sound of moderate volume which seemed as if made by a bell outside of my room and near the ground. It was a pleasant sound, but it was not repeated. It made me think of the Astral Bell spoken of in Conan Doyle's story."

There is no explanation to be made in regard to this memorandum except that my room was on the second floor, at 876 Street, where I lived all winter. The next record is dated December 16th, attached below.

December 13th, 1905, 2 P. M.

I was reading aloud to my mother just now selections from M. J. Savage's "Life Beyond Death," and on page 199 I read that Spiritualism is not a thing to be treated with scorn and contempt, or as being connected with the offscouring of the earth. Early Christianity, you remember if you will read over the writings of St. Paul, was made up of the people that the respectable did not have anything to do with, etc." The paragraph closed—"and now some of the noblest, most intelligent people with whose names you are familiar are open and avowed adherents of Spiritualism." Here I heard three raps (signal for yes) on the wall or bureau, and before I could or did speak of it my mother said—there are some raps.

GEORGE A. T——.

I certify that the above statement is true.

N. A. T——.

(The bureau was three feet from the foot of my mother's bed and about four from the position I occupied.) The next pages refer to raps in connection with crystal gazing.

Dec. 16th, 1905.

Last night between ten and midnight I was awakened by a tapping on my forehead or left temple over which a cotton blanket rested. It frightened me for it was so unex-

pected and mysterious. I pushed off the blanket when it stopped. Then being wide awake or seeming to myself so, I pulled it back to assure myself if it came again. It did come again for half a dozen taps just about when I pushed off the blanket and felt for awhile that this was getting taps at close quarters. The tapping was more distinct than the tap made by the end of the finger. It made me think of a very small light mallet. To waken from a bad dream is a relief, but here the unpleasant sensation came after I was wide awake. The thing was uncanny. [Note Sept. 22nd, 1906, I have to say of this experience that it was the strangest thing I ever knew.]

Dec. 22nd., 1905.

I was wakened this morning by gentle taps upon my left cheek which was covered by a blanket. The taps continued after I was fully awake, two coming close together four or five times. Yesterday as I was writing a letter, mother being in the same room, and she asked what I had just written as she heard three taps near my head. I was absorbed and did not hear. The night before as I was talking to mother about the desirability of Professor Hyslop's conclusions being known as to a future life for the benefit of society when a pronounced rap came on the wall. To-day in thinking what kind of an article I could write on the subject, I unexpectedly heard three raps on the ceiling, apparently. [This record was made at 876, in my room.]

An original entry of any occurrence is always considered the best evidence to be had when it is made in the course of business, and for that reason I am using some of my records instead of copying them. The allusion to "Science and a Future Life" in the last record was not intended for submission to any one, least of all to the author, but as events have turned out it may be (perhaps) construed as proof of the genuineness of the record.

Dec. 27th, 1905.

I wakened last night in the night, and after lying awake some ten minutes or more I heard one stroke of a low-toned

bell at a distance. Soon after the clock downstairs struck two. The tone was like what I have heard before and what I have dubbed my astral bell, but it seemed to be at a distance. But for my recent experiences I should have decided that I merely heard some bell, but there is none to hear in this part of the city, that I know of, and none that would ring one stroke in the middle of the night, except a clock and it rang not over ten minutes before two by the clock downstairs which was approximately with my watch when I got up this morning and my watch is right. It is amazingly curious, to state it mildly. The next record is dated Jan. 6th.

Jan. 6th, 1906, 3.28 A. M.

Within ten minutes I have heard, having been awake perhaps fifteen minutes, three strokes of what I fancy to be a bell. The strokes came about one second apart. The tone had apparently a little more clang than when I heard it before. The last record is not especially valuable as evidence. The record has added to it the next morning the fact that the clock was eighteen minutes slow. The second memorandum says that the sound was apparently in the wall at the head of the bed while the clock was in the room below on the wall corresponding to the wall below the foot of my bed. It also says that probably it had not been over four or five minutes between hearing the sounds and making the record and that I had not been awake (probably) as long as ten minutes. There was no thought of the clock at the time of making the record, and the next morning, while admitting the easy explanation of hearing the clock strike three as accounting for the sounds, I find that I expressed the opinion that it was not the clock that I heard. That was merely my opinion next morning, but obviously it does not carry much weight. The next record is dated March 17th, 1906. It mentions raps and other sounds at No. 4 and at a Mrs. H——'s. No. 4 was the number of my brother's house on East 28th Street and Mrs. H——'s was the place where I had my back stretched by an osteopath.

In a record made January 12th, 1906, is the following: "A number of days ago—at least a week—on waking early in the morning I felt a strong tap on the top of my head. It was not repeated and I neglected at the time to make any memorandum of it." Evidentially this is not so good, but considering the fact that I am extremely bald I think that the record may be accepted at its face value. The record was concerning some incidents told me by my mother. In a record of January 21st, 1906, concerning some automatic writing is the following sentence: "This morning I felt faint touches through the cover on my face after waking." Within something over a month I have experienced some touchings of a different character, but I had felt none of any description for over six months. There is a sense of physical reality about a thing which makes an impression on the sense of touch which is lacking in anything seen or heard.

Jan. 17th, 1906.

This evening I was invited to take dinner at J. W.'s with Mrs. Young and Geneviere. As we all sat at dinner there came two sharp distinct taps on the window pane not far from where Mrs. Young and I sat and then two more came. Mrs. Young asked what it was, or spoke of it in some way and J. W. remarked that it was someone playing tick tack on the window. I asked to be excused so that I could look outside, but there was no one outside. It is my impression that I heard the sounds again as I was coming back to my place. After dinner, mother told me that she was talking with Margaret [deceased] in the afternoon and told her that Mrs. Y.—an old friend and Sunday School teacher of Margaret, would take dinner at J. W.'s and asked her (M) if she would come and rap to show that she was there, and M. said that she would.

In explanation of this record will say that J. W. is my brother, Joseph W. T. His house was 4, 29th Street, East. My mother lived with him and his wife, Mary E. T., all of last winter. My mother believes she can converse to a limited extent by means of raps with the departed members of her family. She got the raps on the

aluminum trumpet which she held in her hands. I have frequently heard the raps she got. Margaret was my youngest sister who died in 1892. Mrs. Young was a neighbor of ours in Minn. 20 years ago and our families were intimate, and Margaret was in Mrs. Young's Sunday School class. Genevieve is Mrs. Young's daughter. They lived at 26 East 26th Street, and Ash,, but last winter lived at 2 28th Street, East.

This record was for my own satisfaction but this explanation probably makes it intelligible—about a week ago I wrote to my brother and sister in Olympia, where they live, and asked for a statement about sounds which they heard at that little dinner party, if they remembered any. I did not attempt to refresh their memories at all. Today, Sept. 29th, I have received a signed statement from them. It is not dated, but came in a letter mailed and dated Sept. 28th. My brother and wife live at 1321 Adams Street, Last winter my brother was rather opposed to investigating psychical phenomena. The following are their statements in regard to the facts:

"As we sat at dinner with our guests, Mrs. Young and daughter, there suddenly came upon the glass of the window nearest Mrs. Young a metallic sound sharp and distinct and sounding like a person rapping. It was noticed by all and Mrs. Young remarked upon it and one of us suggested the possibility of some boy playing tick tack on the window to startle us, whereupon my brother rose, and went to the door to investigate, returning assuring us that no one was outside.

JOSEPH W. T——,

MARY E. T——.

This statement came in a letter written and mailed in on Sept. 28th, 1906, and received today, Sept. 29th.

GEORGE A. T——,

N. A. W. T——.

I have read the record of date Jan. 17th, 1906, and the explanation, and have to say that they give a correct account of the occurrence referred to. I asked of the intelligence which claimed by making certain raps, to be my daughter,

Margaret, to come and make her presence known while Mrs. Young was in the house. I did it as a test for my own satisfaction.

N. A. W. T—.

My mother is in poor health and dislikes the labor of writing. I wrote the above statement for her and she has signed it after reading it in my presence.

I asked the Youngs if they had any recollection of the occurrence, but naturally they did not. Over eight months has passed and nothing was said at the time to fix it in their minds.

Jan. 24th, 1906, about 10 A. M.

Last evening I had some raps in my room, but they would not answer questions except one or two. Soon there was an occasional rap or blow on some one of the tin pails or dishes repeated at intervals of a couple of minutes for fifteen minutes. The sound was like what would be produced by a tap of the finger nail on an empty pail—a two-quart tin pail such as I have in my room. It was raining gently at the time, but there was nothing on the shed roof outside of the window which could have made the sound, and besides rain is a regular thing these days and nights and I have not heard the sound before.

Feb. 25th, 1906.

Today I went with mother to the New Thought meeting at Drew Hall, 2nd and Morrison Streets, and heard T. W. Butler talk for 45 minutes. His subject was the Chemistry of Thought. From the time he began until he closed I heard occasional raps near him on the window and wall, some faint and some clear and noticeable. Mother noticed them, too. When he made a point it was frequently the signal for a rap. I had a talk with him after service and spoke of it. He said he was absorbed in the subject and did not notice anything. He said he could get raps by sitting at table with others and did it occasionally, but did not attempt any experimenting. At the meeting I sat in about the fifth row of chairs and over 20 feet from the speaker. I was talking with mother

this afternoon about my wish to go into a trance to see if the direct voice could be obtained through the trumpet, when there came three loud raps, one in room and two in different parts of the kitchen.

Jan. 30th, 1906.

This afternoon I tried crystal gazing again in a glass of water. Some weeks ago when I tried it I got a cloudy appearance in the water, but today after seven or eight minutes I saw part of a woman's face (I was thinking of C. S.) and a death's head obstructed her features. There was no clouding of the water. Tonight I tried it at eight, P. M., still thinking of C. S., and saw a woman's form reclining and covered with white with her head apparently on a pillow, and while at first she appeared to be on her back later she was on her right side. I could not distinguish the face, but the hair was long and tumbled in appearance. While the vision lasts it seems normal to see it, but when it disappears, it seems as if I might have been asleep for a moment and had a dream. It is not unlike the period between sleeping and waking.

Feb. 6th, 1906.

I have written within a few hours, tried crystal gazing, and saw (while thinking of C. S.) a mound like that over a grave with the foot stone very distinct but the head stone less so. I was thinking of writing to J. S. to see if C. S. was well, when there came a big thump or blow on the stove in the kitchen. The raps about the house and in my room have been numerous lately. Last night they came on a pail or tin in my room and answered a few questions. Three raps came when I asked if it was H. and the question if Dr. F. approved another month's treatment received three raps.

Feb. 19th, 1906.

On Saturday evening (the 17th) there were numerous raps on the window of my room and I could get no affirmative answer to questions of identity until I said C. S.—when the answer was “yes.” She said she was in spirit land. I was disturbed a good deal, as I had not heard from her after

receiving her promise to write, and after crystal visions of what might be indications of her death. Sunday I heard from her and she was well. This morning after I wakened I thought to myself, now either I make these raps unconsciously or else some mischievous intelligence makes them. Immediately there came three raps on the wall near the head of my bed. Saturday evening after the raps stopped on the window they came apparently on a tin pail, making a bell-like note. These crystal gazing records will doubtless sound amusing, but at the time I made the experiments I did not realize that they were probably fragments of memories. On reflection I realized that this was what they were in the form of symbols. I have given these records to emphasize the memoranda of raps. Referring to an automatic writing of Jan. 30th, 1906, I find that it says that the crystal vision meant nothing for me or my friend C. A record of Feb. 7th, 1906, refers entirely to raps in connection with my thoughts about these crystal visions. The closing sentence is, "If raps mean anything, the weight of their evidence would seem to be that she [C. S.] is all right."

Feb. 14th, 1906.

The evening of the 12th, while reading in the front room at No. 4 and when mother was in bed and asleep, there came the sound from the kitchen of some metal object being violently thrown on the table. I was absorbed in a story of Merriam's, and it startled me a good deal. I found nothing disturbed and mother was completely awakened by my voice. I am told that for two days before there had been sounds attracting attention and which apparently had no cause.

In December, when I was much surprised by the bell sounds and by the touchings, I wrote to my friend (who had told me of her experiences) and in the hope that possibly I might be able to get the direct voice with the aid of an aluminum trumpet, she sent me one, as I could not find one in We tried sitting in the dark, and got various raps on the trumpet and I experienced occasional nervous shivers running the length of my spine, but that was all for some time. One night in the winter, about Feb. 18th, I expe-

rienced a buzzing of my spinal nerves more strongly than usual and suddenly found myself half asleep. My mind was clear enough, but my body was going to sleep. I asked my mother if she was afraid to stay with me (no one else was present) and she said she was, so I tried to shake it off, and succeeded in half an hour. That practically ended experiments with the trumpet in the dark. I give record of March 4th, 1906, below.

Last evening while reading "Spirit Workers" I was thinking about my going to sleep (trance) in hope of getting direct voice, and then came numerous raps. Two weeks ago while sitting with another in a dark room with the trumpet on the table, I found myself breathing hard and apparently going into a complete stupor, but I fought it off. Today in the light we sat and I went partly into a doze. The stupor or sleep is preceded by nervous shivers.

In reading "Science and a Future Life" last fall I was impressed by the proposed method of getting what purported to be a discarnate spirit to identify itself by its communications. The suggestion that if that identification could be made satisfactory, survival was thereby demonstrated, seemed to leave no loophole for carping. In view of what my friend had told me about the direct voice, especially, as I was following the directions of what purported to be the discarnate spirit of a physician given in that manner (as I was told) it occurred to me that if the direct voice was a fact such desired identification could not only be made much more quickly and easily than by writing, but that it could be made as often as desired, thus removing the objection so often urged that these spiritistic phenomena are capricious and unreliable. It was very difficult, not to say impossible, for me to believe in the direct voice, but after experiencing the touchings I could go thus far; if any so-called materialization [apparition] is possible (and if I am in my senses there is such a fact which I have experienced) why may not a different and higher form of materialization [apparition] be possible? At any rate with my experience I don't dare to deny it, I have adopted for my own purposes the hypothesis that the direct voice may be a fact. Circumstances have pre-

vented me from experimenting, but I hope to begin again this fall. If that hypothesis prove to be correct the phonograph may possibly be used to perpetuate the sounds.

I have diverged from discussion of raps. Before we got the trumpet, and afterwards, the raps frequently came in my room and in my brother's house where my mother lived. It happened that I frequently tried to get automatic writing to piece out attempted communications by raps, and for months I have not tried to get automatic writing, unless some raps came first. I very rarely attempt to get raps except to satisfy some friend who is interested and it frequently happens that I fail when I do try. They come, however, a very few usually, every two or three days. It is rarely the case that they will answer questions and never but a few. Frequently they will come when I am thinking intently or perhaps when I am talking or reading aloud. That suggests that I may often expect them, but the fact is, if I ever do think of them or partially expect them it is fairly certain—I may say absolutely certain—that they won't come. For months I was inclined to believe that somehow my subliminal self made them in some way, but as a rule they come at a distance of three or four feet from my person, (apparently) and often at a distance of six, ten, or sometimes twelve or fifteen feet. Another page tells of a very surprising occurrence, the first of the kind.

March 5th, 1906.

This morning as I went to the window I asked (this was in Mother's room) "did you hear the robin sing this morning?" and there came three sharp taps on the glass. I went in every morning to see my mother between 9 and 10 o'clock and generally spent a good part of the day with her. I did not attempt to make a record of all the raps I heard but only where it seemed striking for some reason. During the spring and early summer I heard very few though there was an occasional manifestation of some sort, some of which I have already referred to. Practically all the automatic writings I get comes when I hear raps about me. I can very rarely get it at any other time and I cannot always get it

when I hear the raps. Sometimes I can get a word or two and then my hand ceases to write. A record of July 31st describes how several raps came on the ridge pole of my tent, apparently while I was thinking out the details of a magazine article. I got an automatic writing purporting to be from my father in which were answered various questions of a character which is probably more or less idle so far as confirmation goes. One was, if his life was eternal. The answer was "I don't know." I asked if any of his companions had disappeared, and his answer was "No." In regard to lapse of time, the answer was "There is no time." Some ten minutes later came a rap. I took my pen and got the words, "You are to keep your good courage."

There is no intention on my part of attaching any special importance to such messages and I quote them principally to show the conditions under which I get raps. The character of the message is, however, very interesting to me and occasionally there is something which my conscious mind would not have written.

March 14th, 1906.

(Who rapped then?)

Father.

(Did you know my thought about making some money instead of being a pensioner?)

Yes.

(Do you reckon I'll succeed after my long disability?)

I know you will succeed and be happy and make up for your long siege.

(Do you see Emilius often?)

No.

(Is he happy?)

Not particularly.

(Do you see more of Peter than Emilius?)

Yes I do.

(I hope to get your voice some day.)

You will if you don't give up experimenting.

(What do you think of your daughter-in-law?)

She is a fine woman.

(Have you any message for mother?)

My love to her always.

(Can't you appear to me again as you did in Albany?)

I can't now.

(Who made the lights mother saw the last few mornings?)

Ralph does that [deceased brother].*

(Are you giving me this message or is some one doing it for you?)

I am telling you.

(Will you talk again to me?)

Surely.

This writing like many others bears evidence of being the work of the secondary personality. The lights referred to mother told me she saw on the ceiling of her room just before daylight, for several mornings.

March 17th, 1906.

Last evening at No. 4 there were various raps and noises, some of them loud. Some force strikes the stove apparently, and the clang of the iron is loud. On coming to my room I asked for some direct writing but did not get it. I was wakened in the night by the sound of a bell under my bed. It struck twice and fully wakened me. Then in about a minute came a loud tone of a bell which seemed to make the bed quiver. Incidentally it made my nerves quiver. Within five minutes the clock down stairs struck two. Yesterday afternoon I called at Mrs. Hart's for a few minutes and before leaving heard a rap on the ceiling. Two weeks ago there were raps on the table on which I was lying after taking a treatment. I have frequently heard raps on the window when I have been there. The next record is dated April 20th, 1906. I had begun living in a tent in the hamlet of Sodaville in the foothills of the Cascades, and my expense

* Matter in *square* brackets designates comments or notes, matter in *round* brackets designates what the sitter said or asked, and the unenclosed matter designates the automatic writing or messages.

account book shows that the 18th was the first night that I slept in my tent. I spent three months there.

April 20th, 1906.

Wednesday evening (April 18th) I had just gone to sleep in my tent when I was wakened by a bell sound just under my bed. Being sleepy I reasoned that it must be one of the springs, but when daylight came I could not believe that, for there is no evidence to sustain the idea. I think it was like the other bell sounds which have wakened me at intervals during the winter. I suppose that these sounds of bells comes under the head of auditory hallucinations. During December, 1905, and January, 1906, I experienced some sensations which seemed much more remarkable than anything I have described, and I have had a renewal of them in a different form in the past thirty days.

Sunday, May 6th, 1906.

Last night I wakened and soon after something struck the stove (in my tent). After a few minutes the blow was repeated only harder. I got up and looked around the tent by peering out of both ends, and could see nothing, but there were a good many sounds like that produced by tapping with one's fingers on the canvas. The moon was brilliant and I could see the dial of my watch by its light. The time was a few minutes to 11.

June 7th, 1906.

This morning when I first wakened, I heard something strike the coil spring in my bed in quick succession. It seemed to be nearly underneath my pillow. I have a mattress of coil springs just raised off from the ground and an excelsior mattress on that. I asked if it was Helen and one blow responded. I asked if it was Margaret, and there came three blows in regular succession. I asked if mother was all right and there came three blows. I asked if it was necessary for me to go to P—— and one blow came. Then they would not answer any more questions. On two other occasions, of which I made no memoranda, there came a

sharp blow (apparently) on the window glass of the room—once in hotel at Lebanon, Ore., about April 8th or 9th, and once at my brother's house. Both occurred in the night. In regard to the most common phenomena of all, viz.—raps. I have many memoranda mentioning them. Within two hours of the time of this writing my mother and I have heard probably fifty within the space of fifteen minutes. Nothing like that has happened to us for at least seven or eight months and probably won't again for weeks. As I have mentioned, we began to sit in the hope of getting them last October. We agreed on the code of one rap for no and three for yes. We could get them about half of the time, but we only sat occasionally, probably not over a dozen times in all.

Aug. 10th, 1906.

"Tonight as I began to undress in my tent I felt light touchings like gentle brushings of feathers over my head and neck. It continued for a couple of minutes at intervals. It seemed to ruffle the ends of my hair slightly. I took my pen and got the name Helen but no message."

Aug. 11th, 1906, 9:20 P. M.

This evening in my tent as I was thinking over Prof. Hyslop's letter received today, expressing the hope that I write him a detailed account of my experiments, I realized that I must say that none of them had any evidential value except some very trivial matters received through automatic writing. It flashed through my mind that if any trivial circumstances were apparently indications of the supernormal that might be construed as negative proof that the other communications might be from the same source. Just then there came three distinct raps (signal for yes) apparently on the tent pole at the other end of the tent. Later I was speculating upon the chance of my doing something to further the cause of a more democratic government by writing an article on the Oregon experiment, there came several raps in the same place apparently. This memo was made within half an hour of the event.

Aug. 14th, 1906.

Last Wednesday (8th) I heard a loud rap in the tent where I was sitting and taking up my pen got the response that my father was present. He said "you are weary." I was conscious of feeling bad but had not stopped to reflect about the reason. It was true. Today after breakfast I heard a sharp rap. A communication purporting to be from my father warned me that I was in danger of overtaking myself and that I would not get well if I did not exercise care. Two visits to the dentist and some extra effort for four days past had used up my energies pretty completely and made it difficult for me to sleep. An hour or less later I got another communication purporting to come from my father saying that I must go on a long journey soon. I am not submitting these memoranda to prove any theory, but I may be permitted to suggest it in case there is a certain relation between raps and messages I get my automatic writing.

[On the same date came the following automatic writing which has no special connection with this first record.]

Aug. 14th, 1906.

(Who is it?)

Father.

(Have you any message?)

I was over you and Nanny when matters have gone hard with you and I have been much pleased at your courage and good heart in the face of difficulties and disaster. You will both reap your rich return in due time, both in the world you live in, and here where sorrow does not come.

(Can you tell mother about Lizzie and Ralph?)

They are both in a state where it is hard to communicate.

(Are they happy?)

Yes. They do not need solicitude for their welfare.

(Does Dr. S—— come to his daughter's?)

Yes, he goes to them as you can tell by what he says.

(Do people change in your land?)

Not to any extent. We are still much the same as on earth.

The above is an unusually long writing for me to get and had a certain interest for my mother and myself. Nanny is my mother's name or more correctly, it is the name my father used. Lizzie, my sister, died in 1898, and Ralph, my brother, died in 1891. Dr. S—— was the father of some cousins of mine who were experimenting a very little this past summer. They occasionally got automatic writings purporting to be from him. They certainly sounded like him.

Aug. 23rd, 1906, 9 A. M.

Last evening between 8 and 9 P. M., as I was half reclining in my mother's tent I felt the gentle brushing over my head and face that I experienced a number of days ago. It was gentle but unmistakable and produced a very slight tingling. There was a very slight pressure from the outside which I noted especially and which made it a different sensation from that caused by irritation of the nerves of the scalp. It lasted over a minute and I observed the curious phenomena as carefully as possible. It was preceded by an irritation on the back of my left hand which I fancied was caused by an insect, but which was repeated until I remembered the previous experience and wondered if it could be similar; and then in a few minutes came the other sensation about my head and face. I found no insect on my hand but the sensation was like that of a sharp bite from a mosquito. There is no objection to attributing this to a nervous irritation in case of my hand nor in the case of my head and face except the very slight pressure which might be compared with that produced by the lightest imaginable feather duster. Local nervous irritation I always feel in the skin and it is always very marked when it occurs. The difference between external and inward irritation is not great, but to the extent that I am capable of discerning, this sensation was caused by an external energy.

Aug. 27th, 1906.

Yesterday afternoon (Sunday) as I lay on the bed in mother's tent I was thinking of the question of finding a little female society and after dismissing some different plans I thought I'll try to make the acquaintance of Miss J. Im-

mediately there came three distinct raps apparently on the headboard a foot from my head. It startled me so that I laughingly exclaimed. Then I took my pen and got the following writing in answer to questions.

(Who is it?)

Father.

(Did you rap just now?)

Yes.

(What do you think of article I sent to Collier's Thursday?)

I think you are going to create a sensation.

(Then you think it will be printed?)

I know it will.

(Well, you helped me write it, suggested ideas.)

What I could.

(Do you think Joseph will stay in Olympia?)

No.

(Do you think it wise to decline to take mother there?)

Yes, very wise.

(Have you any message for mother?)

My love to her; she is going to be better soon.

The question about article sent to Collier's is referred to in another writing purporting to be from Helen. I considered the article in question to be the best thing I ever did. The connection between that thought and the theory of these writings being the work of secondary personality is too obvious to require comment. However, there are the raps which started the secondary personality off. What is their explanation? They are not automatisms in my case. Are they hallucinations? I am subjectively convinced that they are not, and the members of my family believe them to be real sounds.

To the extent that I am regarded as a good observer (assuming my reliability) my testimony disproves the idea that raps are automatisms, unless my subliminal self can act at a distance from my person. As I remember Prof. Flournoy's investigations of the medium Helene Smith and her automatisms he comes to precisely that conclusion; for he admits

the fact of the raps at the beginning and end of seances and as he discredits the idea of discarnate spirits being dragged from one medium's table to another he is forced to credit the mediums capacity for raps. I believe Von Hartmann comes to the same conclusion, and of his idea Mr. Podmore suggests that it is a gratuitous superfluity of hypothesis. In the last record there is the account of the conveyance to my conscious mind through a sharp rap and an automatic writing of a trifling bit of information. There is just this objection to the theory that my subliminal self communicates with my conscious mind in that round about fashion and that is that it assumes two independent minds in my body capable of acting at the same time. In another place I speak of raps when my mind was intent on a subject of interest and that is so common with me that, as I have remarked at times, raps seem to approve certain thoughts. As I understand psychology both the students of the orthodox theory as well as of the so-called abnormal, agree that the mind is a single entity and that the idea of two is impossible. Prof. Flournoy says of Helene Smith (I am quoting from memory) that he watched her very carefully and he never saw any indications of the subliminal and conscious intelligences acting at the same time, though they often followed each other in close succession. If the psychologists are right, and there is no question raised on that point, I am convinced for my own purposes that raps are not automatisms both because they occur at a distance from my person, and even granting the power of the subliminal to act at a distance, it is agreed that it can't act at all while the conscious mind is following a close train of thought. As for hallucinations, if raps are hallucinations, they have a certain objective reality which permits of their being heard by different ones so far as my observations go to show anything. My interest in the subject must be my apology for discussing certain theories in connection with my own experience.

Aug. 28th, 1906.

Last evening in my tent after dark I had in a very gentle fashion the brushing on my head. It did not last long and

was not as marked as the times before. I was feeling physically exhausted at the time. (I have been living in camp near the city limits since July the 8th, when I returned from the mountains.) I have heard some curious sounds which did not seem to come from ordinary sources, and have three records given below. These sounds came in the night and with one exception in the room where I was sleeping. The first record tells of a noise in my brother's house, No. 4 East 28th Street. My brother and his wife were out making a call. I was in the front room which had a wide opening for portiers leading to the dining room, while back of that was the kitchen with the door open into the dining room. My mother's room was on another side of the kitchen with an open door between.

Aug. 29th, 1906.

"Just now while reading the Oregonian to my mother as she lay in a hammock I heard a thump on a box some five feet distant. It was very noticeable. I took my pen and got the name Margaret. I asked if she had any word and got, "Mary is in danger of illness from — ——" Within 15 minutes I was in the tent and heard a rap and got the writing purporting to be from Margaret, "you give Mary" — — I heard the rap on the box.

N. A. W. T—.

The box we use for a camp table, and there is no explanation for the sound. My cousin, Mary, was unwell and was attempting to do some work. During my sister's life, she and Mary were good friends. The next record was made in connection with the writing of this account, and is dated Sept. 6th, 1906.

Sept. 6th, 1906.

This afternoon, (15 min. ago) as I was writing in my account to be submitted to Prof. Hyslop, I had just finished the sentence speaking of my waking at midnight with the impulse to get up and talk with my sister Margaret about her being cared for when she died by the power that gave her life, when there came on the headboard of the bed in the tent

where I was lying several distinct raps. I have not heard any raps for a number of days and had no thought of any.

Sept. 15th, 1906.

This afternoon while reading in the tent occupied by my mother we heard a thump on the canvass. We spoke of it to each other and later—a few minutes—we heard a rap on the bedstead, and I had the feeling of some one being present. I took my pen and got what purported to be a writing from my sister, Margaret. Some three hours later (just now) we heard two clear raps on the headboard and then a single one. I tried to get a writing, but beyond Margaret's name and a few words could get nothing.

GEORGE A. T——.

I heard the raps as described above.

N. A. W. T——.

I have during the past year got automatic writings purporting to be from several different ones. For a month past most of them purported to come from my father, but until this summer I rarely got any from him. From my brother, Ralph, I have gotten scarcely any. A record of Sept. 20th, 1906, says: "A metallic click on the looking glass six feet distant in mother's tent suggested that I try to get an automatic writing." The writing which I got purported to be from my brother, Ralph, who died 15 years ago. It involves another person besides myself and is of too intimate a nature to quote. It used an expression which I doubt if I ever used in my life, but it was very pat. It also gave me some very sensible advice. On Sept. 7th, according to a record, raps came while I was thinking of a matter which I was much interested in. The writing secured purported to be from my father and he told me he wanted me to do a certain thing. I recognized the wisdom of the advice and have acted on it. It was the only wise thing to do. It made me feel slightly humiliated to think that it did not occur to me before. The action suggested involved my ignoring my own personal feelings. On the hypothesis that these messages come from the subliminal self the method is a curious one to say the least.

I have had writings which predicted deaths; one came true and one did not. I have sometimes had resentments of that nature which generally came true, but the circumstances of the cases were such that I have never regarded them more than instinctive judgments. I have had some writings about myself, my prospects, and they of course remain to be verified. Sept. 23rd, I talked with a palmist and psychic (it was my first sitting in my life besides the one mentioned above and there were six people present then) and very curiously, I thought she predicted things for me which automatic writings have done for me during the past year. The apparitions I have seen seem to indicate a certain capacity for that sort of thing under the right circumstances. My father's apparition coming 20 years after his death with kind words, when I was in a peculiarly difficult position, and when I was trying to do a thing which he, of all people in the universe, would desire to see done, has had a great interest for me. In describing his apparition I referred to some reasons why it might be considered subjective purely. At the sitting referred to, I received a similarly complimentary reference from what purported to be his spirit.

Today is Sept. 28th; and 48 hours ago I got four words of commendation from what purported to be his spirit. That is three times in fourteen months. The bell sounds were pleasing except once, when they made me thrill with the force of the sounds. The other sounds were mildly startling. The touchings seemed least of all experiences capable of being explained as hallucinations. Through a medium (the one mentioned) I heard that the early ones were made by a woman friend of mine who died two years ago. There was quite an intimacy between us twenty odd years ago. Automatic writings give the same source for the brushings on my head and face. The raps from their frequency, the apparent distance from my person, and the fact that others often hear them, seem to be almost every day realities. If my senses are trustworthy at all they come often and indicate an intelligence seeking to attract my attention. Without the raps I should have come to regard all automatic writing as the product of the subliminal, and without other significance.

Once in a while there comes a curious bit of information by writing; also some predictions which may not be verified for years. I have found that to ask about things where I have a strong interest sometimes undoubtedly influences the character of the answer, thus apparently showing the power of suggestion

Occasionally the writing is nonsense, but not often. In sitting with others, I have once or twice found writing apparently influenced by their thoughts, but not often. So betwixt memories, suggestion and telepathy, or various combinations of them, the telepathic communications of discarnate spirits (if I get any) are liable to be distorted. There have been several remarkable books printed in the last few years which, giving evidence the weight we allow it in other human affairs, proves survival and communication. Those books confirmed in a certain sense by many of the non-scientific variety, together with my personal experiences have convinced me of the fact of survival. I do not consider my personal experiences by themselves as proof of the fact, though they probably confirm the possibility of similar experience of others. Naturally I am convinced of the reality of physical manifestations by some force and intelligence not material. Mr. Podmore denounces them all as fraudulent. You don't believe in them except as automatisms or hallucinations, but you admit that it is a question of evidence. Mr. Royce says that every experience must be involuntary the first time and then one can will to believe it, which does not promise well for the rapid spread of the conclusions in your books. It seems to me as a layman, that your work and Mr. Myers' is more conclusive than Darwin's and Romanes' books on evolution, but then I think I hear bells and raps and feel touchings that are not the work of physical beings.

In that connection I will say that as a young man and later I used to hear noises in the house at night. I distinctly remember once in Washington, D. C., when I was sleeping in the house of a friend that the noises were so loud and constant that I got up one night and partly dressed and hunted from basement to the third story to find the cause. I found nothing. It was a new brick house and I was alone in it.

My conclusion was that, for some reason, empty houses make noises at night and for twenty years I have repeated that to myself when I heard unusual sounds at night in a house. It was not an explanation and it was absurd on its face, but for me it has been a fact and the formula answered.

Sept. 17th, 1906.

[A rap caused me to take my pen.]

(Who is here?)

Father.

(Did you hear mother's letter from the B.'s?)

[A rap came before I finished the question.]

Yes. It was a good letter.

(Your old friend is in poor health?)

His journey is almost over.

(Have you any message today?)

You are better I am glad to see—so is Nanny.

(Thursday will be "Old Home Day" in Zumbrota.)

Yes, we shall all be there.

(Lizzie's girls seem to be in good hands?)

Quite fair; they will be clothed and fed and taught. My love to your mother, she will have better health before long I know.

My sister Lizzie died in 1898, leaving two baby girls. Her husband married again shortly before the date of this writing. The B——s are intimate friends of our family. Mr. B—— being my father's closest friend for many years before his death.

Sept. 24th, 1906.

After hunting some weeks for rooms I found and engaged rooms at 863 B—— Street, on going home I told mother of them but expressed regret that they were not just what we wanted. Then there came a number of raps and I got the automatic writing below.

(Who is here?)

Margaret.

(What word dear?)

You have chosen well.

(You think the rooms will be satisfactory?)

They will be satisfactory.

A great many raps came on the head board of the bed in mother's tent while I was getting the writing of which the above is a copy. I will guess that there were as many as fifty raps in a few minutes. It was very unusual.

Today is Nov. 5th, and the rooms have proved to be perfectly satisfactory and the apparent drawbacks are trifling. In saving this I realize that it is more curious than important. [This note was added to the record of Sept. 24th when copying.]

(In my tent, near 568 Linn), Oct. 16th, 10 P. M.

Just now I was almost asleep and a rubbing apparently of the springs under my bed (on the ground), came and a striking which wakened me. I turned over on my right side and it continued and soon there was some pressure under the mattress which pushed the pillow up hard against my face. Thinking something must have got under my bed I struck twice with my fist against the mattress. I got up and lit the lamp and looked but found nothing.

Oct. 17th.

Within half an hour after occurrence described in my tent last night as I was lying on my back reproaching myself for a fool for trying to find better rooms that at 863 B—— (and so getting used up) my bed was jerked suddenly so as to move my body. It was raining hard and my bed was some sixteen inches from the tent wall. I lay still and directly came the gentle brushings over my face and head that I have felt before, but this time it was very marked. This afternoon after a busy day getting settled at 863 B—— Street, I had paid my help and lay down flat on my couch when there came an explosive crack in my room. I took my pen and got the name Father. I asked if he was satisfied with my arrangements for mother's comfort and the answer was "yes."

Sept. 25th, 1906.

Today is Sept. 25th. I have just been changing the position of a hammock that mother uses, and while I was

hanging it there came half a dozen sharp raps on the window of the house. The sound was similar to that made by a piece of metal on glass. The distance from where I stood to the window I have just measured and it is twenty-eight feet. There were two people in the house but they were not near the window nor in that part of the house.

To go back to the records. One dated Jan. 17th, 1906, is an automatic writing account. I was conversing with what purported to be the discarnate spirit, H. R. I asked her if she was happy. She said yes. I asked if she was happier than when in the body and she answered, yes, far. I asked if the spirits lived on the earth as of old, and the reply was "we can stay here if we wish." I asked if it was her desire to stay here and she said "yes." In the afternoon I was thinking of what Helen and Margaret had said of their happiness and the stanza of Omar's went through my mind:

"Why, if the soul can fling the dust aside
And naked on the air of Heaven ride,
Wer't it not a shame, wer't not a shame for him
In this clay carcass crippled to abide?"

Completing this record are these words: "And just then a loud thump came on the wall at the foot of my couch. Mother noticed it and said, 'What are you thinking about?' That is a record which Mr. Podmore would dispose of with some of his characteristic sarcasm. A year ago I should have said bluntly that a man who believed in such an experience was undoubtedly crazy. Today I am pasting in part of the record and copying the balance.

Oct. 13th, 1906.

Just now while thinking of Prof. Hyslop's letter and wondering about Mrs. C—— and Mrs. P——, whose addresses he wants, and thinking about my own chances in experimenting, there came a sharp metallic crack at a distance of a few feet. I took my pen and got the name H. I asked her what word she had and got this:

"You brave boy; I love you more than I ever did before. We shall be happy together some day after you have done your work."

Last Tuesday I got this, purporting to be from H—:

"You are to succeed ultimately; keep up courage."

The following is a curious thing. I had been hunting rooms for a month and finally I engaged some. I was telling my mother about them and expressing that I could not do better when unexpectedly the raps began to come very clearly and distinctly on her bedstead. Margaret is the name of a sister who died in 1892 and whose presence I think I am conscious of occasionally.

(Who is here?)

Margaret.

(What word, dear?)

You have chosen well.

(Did you go with me?)

Yes.

(You think the rooms will be all right?)

They will be satisfactory.

(I am glad to have you come Margaret.)

I am glad to come.

(Are you alone today?)

No.

(Who is with you?)

Father and Lizzie.

(What message for Mother?)

But * * me.

(Who is here tonight?)

Helen.

(Is Clara Smith going to die soon?)

No.

(What was the meaning of the crystal vision I had today when I saw a death's head in front of a woman's face? This experimenting interests me much and I would like your help if you will give it.)

It meant nothing at all for you or your friend Clara.

(Who was it?)

I can't say who it was.

(It seems Joseph has got his name on the government eligible list after all?)

Yes, and he will have a place very soon.

(Do you think he will leave Portland?)

Yes he will go to B.

(Can't you give the name?)

No.

(Who would be a good person to help us with the trumpet?)

Maybe Mr. Young could help.

(Is it painful or difficult to find out about people for me?)

No.

(Will you find out about Mrs. Foster, the Spiritualist minister at 309 Alder Street?)

Yes, I'll try.

(Goodnight, Helen.)

Good-night, dear George.

(I pray that you may be happy.)

A great many raps came while this writing was going on. They were not loud, but were almost constant.

Oct. 24th, 1906.

On Oct. 22nd I received a letter from an old friend. It was evidently written under stress of strong feeling and I was almost implored to respond at once. I was unable to answer that day though I did begin a note saying that I would write later, but I destroyed it. That night after I had gone to bed and left the light burning, I was thinking of what I would say to this letter. Suddenly there came a sharp crack on the window or near it—a distance of ten feet from me. I took my pen and got the name H——. I asked what word there was for me and this came: "You see A. F. before you write C——." It seemed very foolish and I felt that my subliminal was playing tricks. I could get nothing further. Today I got another letter from my friend C——, which explained the trouble. C—— is in a trying position with a friend and the situation is identical with one which I occupied with A. F. a year ago and which is not forgotten yet, if indeed it is ended. So the suggestion by automatic writing was very *a propos*, but I got it thirty-eight hours before the letter which explained why it was a *propos*.

The first letter gave absolutely no hint of the cause of the distress.

I copied the automatic writing above from the cover of a book of street car tickets which was the only thing within reach that I could write on when I was in bed. I made another record of this within a very short time of the occurrence and used full names and mentioned details of an intimate nature. As I was describing the similarity of my friend's trouble with mine a loud rap or thump came on the stove and that is mentioned in that record. Chance coincidence is out of the question unless my subliminal self discovered the matter and through automatic writing made a most pungent suggestion to my conscious intelligence. I must conclude that some outside intelligence conveyed that suggestion to me after the physical manifestation of a sharp rap in an absolutely quiet room. I had the automatic writing Monday night and it sounded crazy and senseless. Today thirty-eight hours later, a letter came which showed that the automatic writing conveyed a very pointed allusion. Of course this is not direct evidence; it is merely my opinion of certain facts or their significance, though I have described the general nature of the facts.

Oct. 25th, 1906.

Within the week we have been here we have heard many raps, some very loud. One day several raps came twice. The second time I got up and went to the hall not realizing the source. One day mother was speaking of Aunt Abby's dying alone and a clear rap came on the stove across the room. Tuesday, Mary and I were waiting for a car on Shaver Street, and I was remarking about how wearing monotonous repetitions of effort were (we were talking of teaching school) and there came a thump on the under side of the rail on the fence against which I was leaning or sitting. I looked to see what made it before I stopped to think. Mary laughed and said "is it?" And I said "Yes, it is." Oct. 22nd there was a very loud crack apparently in the hall before daylight. Yesterday there were various raps as I

was making a record of some phenomena also when I wrote to Mr. Hyslop about Mrs. ———.

Oct. 25th, 1906.

[Raps came on floor while I was hunting for records near my trunk on floor just now.]

You are going to get a happy surprise.

(Can you tell me the nature of it?)

No.

(What was the name you began to write yesterday?)

Anna Flinn.

I asked who it was when the raps came. Three raps came when I asked if it was Helen.

Also three when I asked if she would write for me.

Yesterday a rap induced me to try for a writing of which I make a copy.

(Who is it?)

Helen.

(Can you tell me of your life?)

We watch over you mortals and try to help you.

(You must get disgusted with us?)

No, not at all, for our vision is clear.

Aug. 28th, 1906.

I was lying in my tent and it occurred to me that next Sunday night I would see an acquaintance at Hotel Perkins if nothing happened. There came a rap near me and I took my pen, and got this which purported to be from father: "You will receive a letter this week which will give you an unexpected"— I could get no more, but went into the house and tried planchette with Mary Sedgwick and Miss Myrtle Pease to get balance of message. After some illegible words we got this: "You will receive a letter from Mrs. Phillips. I asked what about and got the word "Mamma" and "Mother" and some illegible words—something about her being well. While trying, we got this, "Helen intim"— I asked is Helen here? The answer was yes, and I got the following writing: "You never (never almost illegible) are more sure of success (success almost illegible) in eternity

(eternity hardly legible) than you are now." In answer to what about the answer was "You know."

Writings are copied from automatic writing and planchette.

On September 2nd I got a long distance telephone message that my friend would not be at Hotel Perkins. I did not get a letter from Mrs. Phillips. The manuscript which I had some hopes of and what I supposed was referred to in the message purporting to be from Helen was declined and received back Sept. 19th. Automatic writing is very evidently the work of secondary personality.

Sept 14th, 1906.

(Who is here?)

Margaret.

(What message have you Margaret?)

You are in the right way to get well, Mother and you.

(Who rapped for Mother night before last?)

I did.

(You have not come lately?)

I could not.

(Are you alone today?)

Yes.

(Do you know about the fourth dimension?)

No.

[Got above after hearing two raps near me.]

Sept. 15th, 1906.

(Who is here?)

Margaret.

(Did you rap for mother last night?)

Yes.

(Can you tell us where you have been so that you could not come to us?)

I have been about my Master's business.

(May we know more?)

You would not understand but I'll tell you. I watch over the goings and comings of the little babes to your world

and ours, and see that they go as it is desired. Now you can't understand.

(Do you think you could make an impression with your hand on paper covered with lamp black?)

I guess so. Yes. [Experiment was a failure.]

Oct. 28th, 1906.

Helen is with you in your troubles and perplexities and wonders at your patience and now

(Did father write for me last night?)

Yes.

(Do I get messages straight?)

I think you do very well.

(Your message last Monday night is the first one I could ever prove I did not write myself.)

You will believe more in time.

(The temptation is to bother you with attempted tests—you understand?)

Yes I know.

(I hope to get the direct voice soon—yours and my families.)

You are going to get what you want and soon.

(I shall be so glad to talk with you.)

I shall too—so glad.

(When that comes we can converse and I can do, with your help, a great deal for science.)

You will do a great deal more than you expect in various ways.

(I am glad to hear so, very glad.)

Oct. 25th, 1906.

A writing from Father, or purporting to be, recently said: "You will soon go on a journey." That message has come three times I think from Father and once from Helen, and was told me by Mrs. F, a palmist and psychic.

Since moving here a week ago one day there came a sharp crack when I was thinking about the new arrangements I had made. The writing I got purported to be from my father. I asked about his meaning in rapping and the answer

was: "To tell you not to worry." I then spoke of my dear desire, getting communication through the direct voice—and the answer was: "You will some day soon." On Oct. 23rd (I think) I got what purported to be a writing from Ralph after a rap came in the room where we three were. It said, "I see Mother, Mary and you all together." I asked if he was happy. The answer was "Yes, very happy." He said, "You will be successful" and I asked in what, and answer was "in politics," adding "you will marry."

Nov. 4th, 1906.

[Raps occurred again and I sought to interrogate the cause of them by automatic writing, with the following result:]

(Who rapped?)

Father.

(What word have you?)

You must not weary of well doing, for in due time you shall reap if you faint not.

(Do the members of your family meet in your land?)

We meet when we wish.

(Can you tell me about people whom I would know of?)

Perhaps.

Note. [I was feeling depressed and discouraged when I got this. In fairness it is worth while to remember that if this is the work of secondary personality there does not seem to be the same response to self suggestion that appears or seems to appear in other writings. Of course self-suggestion through a score of years of invalidism has made me realize that it was unwise to yield to depression since that may be considered stronger than a temporary discouragement and may even combat it. This is perhaps an added argument in favor of secondary personality.]

Nov. 5th, 1906.

This morning at about six o'clock before getting up I was thinking of the reputed haunted house that I went to see at Cornell Road and Everett Streets yesterday afternoon where various physical manifestations are said to occur, and I was

wondering if I had the courage to go there and stay and should see some of the appearances if I could use effectively the giving of messages of good will and peace to the disturbed spirits (as I have heard of its being done by a lady whose brother came to her after death) when there came an explosive crack in the wall (or outside) in the corner of the room some thirteen feet from where I was lying. There was no one sitting in the house and the sound was like others that I hear without apparent cause.

Nov. 18th, 1906.

Dr. James H. Hyslop, New York City.

Dear Sir:—In your letter of 11th inst. you ask for description of quality or timbre of raps which I have reported. The sounds vary from very faint ticks to loud thumps when they appear to be made on some object. It is middling difficult to describe a sound with exactness unless one can compare it with some familiar sound. The most notable peculiarity of these sounds is that they do not have any continuing or dwindling effect—are cut off short. In striking even a light blow with a hammer or with the end of one's finger there is a slight reverberation. That seems to be almost entirely lacking in these sounds. When the sounds appear to come on a pane of glass they are much like the cracking of ice when it is freezing. Raps on a table are generally faint, metallic clicks, but frequently at the same sitting some will be a good deal louder than others. Raps on window frames, doors, or boxes are not unlike those which would be produced by rapping with one's knuckles, but without any reverberation. I have often heard them as loud as one would make (without trying to make an especially loud rapping) on a door for instance. I have heard a very few which would require a blow almost hard enough to bruise the skin of a hand not hardened by labor of any kind. I have heard (three times I think) blows on glass which sounded sharp enough to crack the pane.

You ask if the sounds are modified by the substance in which they seem to occur? As I have said, that seems to be very much the case. The sounds seem to be of much the same nature as would be produced by a blow and the char-

acter of the object struck seems to determine the sound. The idea which I have got is that the force goes right through the object very swiftly. In saying that there is no reverberation I think that I am accurate, and yet three days ago I heard a thump on a closet door (apparently) across the room and the sound gave the impression of a hollow confined space behind the door. The closet is about five feet wide and as much as twelve feet deep and without any window or opening. It would perhaps be more accurate to say that there seems to be much less reverberation than in the case of a blow with a physical object on some hard substance.

There is one other sound which I referred to in a previous record—a crack or explosion in the air apparently. It is not unlike the sound of a toy pistol though sharper if anything. It also seems to extend through a certain distance of space—a sort of splitting explosive crack.

You ask how I protect myself from elusions of judgment as to locality. I don't know of any way to protect myself absolutely against illusions. I endeavor to reckon up all possible explanations of sounds before attributing them to any force not visible and material. If there is no reasonable possible explanation that I can think of, I attribute them to unseen forces. That's the only way that seems safe. By following that rule I feel satisfied that in a large majority of cases I am able to come to accurate conclusions. Of course even that does not prevent me from being subject to hallucinations. I have no recollection of hearing any sounds during the past year that others did not hear when others were with me. To use an expression of Dr. Moll's in his "Hypnotism," I am subjectively convinced that telekinesis is a physical fact whatever the explanation may be. I think it is safe to say that in most cases these sounds don't carry any distance. That is to say they are not heard as far as one would think they must be. Sometimes the fainter sounds will be scarcely noticed by some person in the room where they occur unless they are mentioned. If my theory is correct that there is little or no vibration in the object which is struck, that may account for lack of carrying power.

You suggest that I send you copies or originals of all automatic writings. I send quite a number herewith, mostly originals. I have regarded them as very curious and interesting and as giving opinions and answering questions from a sort of detached point of view. I have wondered and speculated about them a great deal, and as I mentioned in some records sent into you I considered them as doubtless distorted by memories, self-suggestions and telepathic messages, even if any of them were from discarnate spirits. The only supernatural thing connected with them that I am certain of is the raps which are generally the signal that I can get a writing.

In reading this over I see that I may have given ground for believing that Dr. Moll believes in telekinesis which I did not intend to do.

GEORGE A. T——.

Nov. 19th, 1906.

This morning I was wakened by a noise in the wall by the side of my bed. It was sharp enough to waken me completely and there seemed to be some of the explosive quality in the sound which I have heard in sounds produced in the air in my room. After I wakened there was a loud rap in the wall on the other side of the room and this sound did have a distinct reverberation. There was no reasonable, or so far as I know, possible explanation of the sounds.

Nov. 26th, 1906, 7:50 P. M.

Just now I was reading aloud to my mother from F. C. S. Schiller's "Riddles of the Sphinx" on page 400. I was reading this passage: "If we can conceive a future life, the reality of which depends on memory, it will admit of less and more. And if, as seems natural, the extent to which the events of life are remembered depends largely on the intensity of spiritual activity they implied, it follows that the higher and the intenser consciousness was during life, the greater the intensity of future consciousness. Hence the amoeba or the embryo, with their infinitesimal consciousnesses, will possess only an infinitesimal memory of their past after death. But

this for a two fold reason." Just here there came a loud thump on the door of a deep closet across the room from both of us some twelve feet. No other person was on this floor, the second of a two-storied frame house in a quiet situation.

GEORGE A. T——.

This is a correct statement.

N. A. W. T——

Nov. 19th, 9:30 P. M.

[A number of raps on rung of chair in my room led me to ask some questions. I asked finally if I could get some writing and got several raps, the last being almost explosive.]

(Who is it?)

Helen.

(What message tonight?)

I am going to talk with you so very soon, my dear George.

(Shall I take my turn?)

Yes.

(How do you explain the contradictory messages I get?)

You don't get contradictions from me.

(Is Mrs. D's. [two raps] prediction about me true?)

Yes, more than true. You will be great, honored and loved.

(That is a tremendous prophecy, Helen!)

No, it is only a fact.

(In what field shall I succeed?)

In several, politics way.

(Were you with me at Mrs. Drew's?)

No.

(Shall I help some in psychical research?)

You will do much.

(Are you happy?)

Yes.

(Is your mother with you?)

Yes.

(Do you think Mrs. C—— will agree to help Dr. Hyslop in his researches?)

The chances are she will yet. I can't say positively.

(Will it be a good plan to write to her husband?)

I believe it would.

(Do evil spirits assume your personality to annoy me?)

I don't know. They can.

(How can I tell?)

You will be able to in time.

(It is a case of patience?)

Yes, it is.

(Do you have the same feelings as you did when you were in your physical body?)

No, not at all. I am much [more so] more happy, less jealous, less inclined to find fault.

[After writing first "more" my hand stopped and then slowly wrote "so." It then began "more" and wrote on.]

(Do you regret dying so early?)

Not now. I did at first.

(What do you think of the idea of reincarnation?)

It is true.

(For you?)

Not for me. I am blessed and can live and love and work as a spirit.

(You have become?)

Almost. I can grow as I am.

(Does my psychic power increase?)

I think it does slowly.

(Can you appear to me?)

Not yet.

(I have not had the brushings for five weeks.)

You may have them again soon.

[Note made Nov. 20th.] Before trying to get any writing I made a brief memorandum of raps but not complete. I asked first if it was father. Then I asked if it was Helen and there came two raps. Then I asked if it was Helen a long ways off and the answer was three distinct raps apparently on the rung of a chair some six feet distant. Then I asked for a writing. This writing interested me somewhat. I had been to see a psychic who had agreed to give me a sitting. This was written before the sitting. The sitting

proved a disappointment but the psychic did say she saw a man bearing the letter R. and then showing the letter H. Those were her first words as I remember. The letters R. H. are the initial letters of my friend's name from whom this writing purports to come. But R. stands for the surname and H. for the given name. At a previous talk with this psychic, she predicted a most amazing future for me. That talk was held before this writing. That will explain my question about Mrs. D's prediction and the answer. On the page above the question "you have become?" has a curious sound, but I had just been reading a chapter of Schiller's on "The Becoming of the World" and used the word in the sense of "arrived" as we often use it.]

(Is any one here?)

Helen.

(What word?)

You must not get blue; it is bad.

(The cause is physical?)

You tax yourself.

(Do you think our thoughts affect others?)

I know they do.

(How much influence do they have?)

Enough to cause death.

(What killed you?)

I do——no.

(How much can we influence you?)

* * * * * [undecipherable.]

Can you rap on the horn for me?

Yes. [None came on the horn, but some came in room.]

[This was not dated but was written Nov. 29th or 30th, 1906.]

I have never learned the cause of my friend's death, but merely the fact that she was dead. This writing came when I was suffering from physical exhaustion and depression.

[The following is a copy made some twenty-four hours later than the first writing.]

Dec. 1st, 1906.

Last evening about 6 P. M., I was feeling unwell. Some raps suggested the idea of a writing and I got this.

"Helen is sorry you are ill; you try to do too much." Another sentence was begun but not finished—"will you go about 8 P. M." I was thinking of an acquaintance and some unusual thumps on the stove came. I took my pen and got the name Helen. I asked what message? and the words came—"She is all you think of her; you will make no mistake." I thanked H and said I shall see you some day. The answer came "yes, some day in the future—ever and ever." I asked for some of the passes or brushings, and felt a few faint tinglings run down my face and then three light taps on the top of my head.

This morning I felt giddy and miserable. After breakfast I expected to go to town with mother. There came many thumps on the stove and I took up my pen. I got the name Helen, and asking for a message got this.

"You must be careful; you ought not to do anything for a while." I asked if she thought I ought to give up my trip to town and the answer was "No, but be prudent." After that the noises on the stove stopped. While writing the previous page, after the words "she is all you think her" there was a noise on the stove as if a cover had been dropped half an inch on to the stove.

This afternoon on coming in from out of doors mother showed me a very brief automatic writing. She got it soon after I had my advice to be prudent. She said she tried it as an experiment because so many noises came on the stove. She got the word "believe" and asked the question, she said, "do you mean the raps on the stove?"—and the answer was "Yes." She asked who it was and got the name Helen, though spelled with two l's. The H was written in this way, though my mother always uses the other form, *i. e.*, my old friend always wrote the letter H this way, which my mother did not know.

I know of no automatic writing which I have got that bears any evidence of being anything but the work of the secondary personality. I have received writings a few times

giving advice, but as they have been concerning some unhappy personal experiences, I can't overcome my reluctance to quote them. Like most of the others, they have been invariably preceded by raps to attract my attention. The advice on several occasions has been most excellent and I have followed it, though it has gone against my inclinations. I have also received advice of which my judgment disapproved, though in those cases it was concerning something that I wanted to do but that my circumstances would not justify. My own conclusions are based on all my experiences. Without the physical manifestations I should have dismissed the writings as of no importance. So far as raps and the sounds of bells and apparitions go, they may be hallucinations, but my experience of the sounds satisfies me that if they are hallucinations they impress every person who happens to be with me, in the same way they do me. The matter of touchings on my face and head, the raising of the mattress and pillow under my head and the jerking of my camp bed so as to "shock" my body (I weigh 175 pounds) do not appeal to me as hallucinations. If I were to be convinced that they were hallucinations I should immediately join the Christian Science Church, or ask to be shut up in an insane asylum. Those phenomenal experiences convince me of the fact that intelligent forces, not material, have manifested themselves to me though I don't know what those forces are. Starting with that conviction I am inclined to believe that the same kind of intelligent force makes the raps and other sounds to attract my attention.

As a matter of speculation, I think that it may be the case, especially in view of the work of the Society for Psychological Research in identifying intelligences claiming to be discarnate spirits, that the deceased members of my family, my father, brother, two sisters, and an old friend, do attempt to communicate with me. I think that there are indications of it, but there is no proof at all. As a further speculation I think it may be that I get messages telepathetically from incarnate spirits, and that they appear in my automatic writings. The most striking indications of it are too abominably personal to quote. In the first record I sent in I discussed

the question of my making these raps myself, and concluded that as I don't have a double, according to the orthodox psychologists, I could not. As a further speculation may it not be reasonable to believe that as personality is not a fixed quantity, but disintegrates and splits, that a temporary disintegration or diffusion may have a quasi independence. Having once seen my own apparition, I can believe in the idea of an astral body, or a diffusion of my psychic force consistent with perfect consciousness. Would it be straining analogy to suppose that that diffusion or disintegration of psychic force having enough energy to move, could act in other ways and independently of and simultaneously with the conscious intelligence? Such an action might consist of a slight explosion of energy in reaction to the intelligence of some incarnate being, or discarnate being, or even to the conscious intelligence from which it is partially separated. That may be a fanciful hypothesis but it would account for some curious experiences of mine. Would it not also account for the alleged capacities of many mediums who do not seem to suffer so much from disintegrations of personality as from occasional diffusions of psychic force, if I may coin that term? The various materializations and ectoplasms, as Mr. Myers calls them, might be the reactions of discarnate spirits on this psychic force. In beginning this correspondence I had nothing in mind but the plan of bearing testimony to the reality of psychical manifestations. The other phenomena may help to place those manifestations, but in my case I should say that without those manifestations I should have nothing to communicate which would be of interest.

Very truly yours,

GEORGE A. T. _____

Dec. 7th, 1906.

The question about crystal gazing resulted from an attempt to learn something (if possible) about a friend in Pittsburg, Pa. The death's head made me uncomfortable. I heard from this friend a month later and also this fall.

My brother Joseph had been trying to get into the gov-

ernment service as draftsman. He got an appointment at ——— early in April, 1906.

I am sending with this somewhat lengthy account a brief statement by my mother concerning some lights which appeared on the ceiling of her bedroom for several mornings last winter. I also enclose statements of my aunt, her two daughters and my mother about some raps they heard one day this past summer. I have given practically all of certain curious experiences. I have occasionally been saved from physical injury by an inexplicable warning but I have never made any record of such experiences. I was once saved from falling down a steep bank in the dark and once from falling down stairs in the dark in a strange house. At about the time I began my investigations two years ago, I admitted to myself that it would always pay for me to regard premonitions even if it was superstitious. Today is October 1. Last night at midnight I wakened and after perhaps fifteen minutes I heard faintly the bell sounds under my bed. I lighted a lamp and pulled up the clothing and mattress to see if there was anything that could make the sounds. There was nothing. The sound came less than a dozen times at intervals of perhaps six seconds. I began with an account of an apparition shortly before I was twenty-three and close with an account of mysterious bell-like sounds while I am in my forty-sixth year. I consider myself sane and clear-headed. Until within a couple of years I have not been able to believe in any existence after this physical one. I hope that I have met the requirements which make records of this kind useful.

Very truly yours,

GEORGE A. T. _____

May 18th, 1907.

Dear Dr. Hyslop:—In reference to experiences which I made the subject of an extended report last fall, I have but little now to add. The sounds of rappings and blows of greater and lesser intensity still come to my ears every few days and often every day. I have never known an instance when individuals who happened to be with me at the time of the sounds did not hear them. There are seven different

people who have heard them and who admit the inexplicable nature of the occurrences. None of the seven is a spiritualist. As a general thing the loudest sounds come at night. Very frequently I can get a sentence or two of automatic writing when I hear the sounds, but sometimes I cannot. I believe I suggested in my record that the sounds might be produced by invisible intelligences or by living beings in rapport with me. I have lately read Flammarion's "Unknown," and notice that on page 306 he says somewhat dogmatically that "a projection of psychic force can transform itself into physical, electrical, and mechanical effects." That seems to be a reasonable explanation, for I cannot be the victim of hallucinations when others hear the same sounds, unless they get the hallucinations telepathically from me. The latter hypothesis places a new burden on telepathy. I have kept a note book and jotted down these curious manifestations as they occur and will quote a few bearing on the idea of rappings being manifestations of psychic force of living people. I have no proofs to offer, but assuming my accuracy in observing and reporting the results may appear suggestive.

I have referred in my report to the occurrence of loud raps when I was reading aloud or speaking of some matter of unusual interest to me and my companions. These continue at intervals averaging once a week at least. That is not often enough to expect, but when they come it gives a laughable emphasis at times. During the past six months I have noticed the increasing frequency of raps, thumps and bell-like sounds when thinking of some idea or hope or plan in connection with some person with whom I am in sympathy or "rapport." That would seem to be proof of hallucination if it were not true that others hear the sounds, which spoils that explanation. In using the word rapport I mean such a condition as enables one person to make another look up and turn round half unconsciously without being aware of the presence of the one exercising the power. The conditions are similar, possibly, to those which permit of telepathic communication. The following record shows another phase of the theory.

March 25th, 12 P. M.

"Within a few minutes I was awakened by a violent blow on the closet door in my room and following that by an interval of say sixty or ninety seconds, there came a second blow quite as loud. Immediately after the second noise I heard a latch key put into the street door and Miss M—— came up stairs." I had not slept the night before and was exhausted, and so went to bed early and had been asleep three hours and was disgusted at being wakened, but I compelled myself to light a lamp and make a brief record. That record in my note book is the best proof I can offer that I was not dreaming.

In explanation: My mother and I rented three rooms on the second floor of a large frame house, the fourth room being occupied by Miss M——. The sounds came on a closet door about fifteen feet from my mother's room. At six o'clock in the evening our landlady came to our rooms and said to me that she should be away all night and that Miss M—— would not be home until late, and said that I could look out for the house. No one was occupying the first floor that night. Miss M—— did not carry a latch key as a rule and it had sometimes been necessary for me to go down stairs to let her in when our landlady was away. The thought had occurred to me that it might be necessary that night, but I had dismissed it as unreasonable. If the sounds were hallucinations they were coincident with an event whose time I could not have known. That assumes that the sound had some connection with the arrival. As for their being the work of my subliminal self, such as waking at the desired hour, there seems to be no occasion for a racket. On Flammarion's theory it is not unreasonable that the lodger on getting off the car one hundred feet from the house thought of her landlady's absence and of previous occasions when I had let her in, and as I am what is called mediumistic, it maybe I got the message as a sound. I do not claim this but offer it as a theory. That leaves the spirit out—except of the living.

My mother and I, who are in close sympathy, have been living together for some years but lately she left me. She

had been reading Hudson's *Mental Therapeutics* and one evening (April 10, 9 P. M.) it occurred to me that she might try to send me a message. Almost with the thought came a very loud double rap on the other side of the room which was so loud that it startled me, and I am used to all sorts of noises of that kind. Of course it may have been an hallucination, but what caused it? I think it was a real sound, but I was alone. A casual thought of the interest of a close friend would hardly create an auditory hallucination. If it did, it would doubtless be of some occurrence connected with that friend—a vivid memory for instance I have had a number of such experiences and some of the sounds have been heard by others.

In March I read Mr. William T. Stead's charming little volume, "*Letters from Julia*," and as an experiment I tried the method proposed of visualizing a departed friend and wishing to see him. A record of March 19th, 10 P. M., says: "Got lots of loud raps in room and one on the table so loud it gave me a nervous thrill. I tried the experiment at other times and got same results. Once I got in addition, in the moment between sleeping and waking, a vision of a luminous human form floating down toward me. The face was not distinguishable. Visions between sleeping and waking are very rare with me; this being the second of which I have any memory. About an hour before there was a sharp rap on the ceiling (apparently) and I got the automatic writing: "I am in hopes you will be able to see me when I try to appear."

I cannot say that I consider my automatic writings more than curious productions. Sometimes they give extremely sensible advice and sometimes they tell fibs of a very stupid character. They are always very brief. It is much easier for me to visualize a memory than to get an auditory recollection. For that reason it seems curious to me that the hallucinations I get (if hallucinations they be) are of what the Theosophists call the tangible type—what I can hear and feel. Of course the Theosophists don't call them hallucinations at all but manifestations of psychic force. Naturally I am interested in so called physical phenomena. Those I

have described in my report continue to occur occasionally and show a force of some kind.

In giving testimony on the subject I am aware that to all who have not witnessed similar phenomena they must almost carry proof of their hallucinatory character. I have had the suggestion that I dream them. One or two occurrences might be explained in that way, but constantly recurring ones cannot be set aside in that fashion. Enough manifestations occur in the daylight while I am occupied to make that explanation absurd. Even the admission that they are hallucinations does not solve the puzzle, for they must have a cause, an external cause, unless my mind is diseased. My memory and reasoning powers are normal, so far as I know, and I have no fondness for religious rites. So far as I know myself I am a cheerful individual with considerable sensitiveness to censure or ridicule and a twist toward sensuality which I often regret. I am satisfied of the reality of my experiences and while they don't prove anything about survival after death, they have made me ready to subscribe to the belief in the motto to Coleridge's "Ancient Mariner."

The proposal to print the disjointed account of my experiences in the *Proceedings* can be justified only because they may represent a type which is probably quite common, and concerning which it is desirable to get confirmatory evidence. Then, too, if these things are so among commonplace people and they come to be recognized as normal under some conditions there will cease to be incredulity and accusations of insanity when some man like Swedenborg appears. There does not seem to be any good object to be attained in signing my name to this kind of a self analysis, but I shall be glad to answer any correspondents who may address me in care of the Society for Psychical Research. I have heard testimony which in other cases would hang a man for treason or convict him of murder, but in psychical research it is laughed out of even a hearing. That testimony convinces me of the probable truth of the existence in the case of certain favored mediums of the independent or direct voice. Fear of public contempt makes it impossible to have a scientific

investigation of such cases. Yet if it is true, trance communications through different mediums is but a very poor method of proving survival. If tangible manifestations are a fact, and my confessions show that I believe it, a voice is as possible as the touch of a vanished hand. I am inclined to believe that this generation can settle the question if it will; and it is quite as important as donations to libraries, building of hospitals and colleges, or the prevention of hog cholera, all of which worthy objects receive large sums of money each year.

side
non
whi
wh
exp
anc
it t
tha
suc
of t
any
pur
ing
rece
imp
had
hav
inte
leas
in t
ter
scie
valu
to b
for
an a
lishi
natu
case
resu
in p
ible

THE McCAFFREY CASE.

By James H. Hyslop.

INTRODUCTION.

The case which is here reported at such length has a considerable interest for the student of alleged occult phenomena. It is a remarkable set of incidents on any theory which the reader may choose to believe. I do not know whether it is more interesting for the elusiveness of the explanations which offer themselves than it is for the appearance of the supernormal which it represents. In any view of it the story has an importance for the student, and it is for that reason that it is published in so much detail. Usually such incidents justify their consideration by the importance of their outcome, but in this instance no assured conclusion in any direction is possible, while the facts ascertained in the pursuit of some desired result have such an important bearing on the cautiousness with which such stories ought to be received that even a negative result has a value almost as important as any positive one might have had. If the dream had been realized in the validity of the certificates alleged to have been found where the dream located them, the evidential interest of the story would have been much enhanced, at least in the light of the popular imagination. But the break in the link of events established by this failure robs the matter of its romantic feature, and the case had none but a scientific one after that. But this is an interest of no mean value, and there remained after the failure of the certificates to be what they claimed to be the importance of accounting for the dream and the existence of the papers discovered in an apparently supernormal manner. The difficulty of establishing any valid explanation of the facts, with the elusive nature of any explanation that could offer itself, makes the case an important one for psychic research, regardless of the results obtained. That is the justification for so much detail in phenomena that seem as little credible on the most plausible hypotheses as on those of a supernormal character.

It should be remarked for the benefit of the reader that the events which are described so long after their occurrence do not depend solely on the memory of the reporters. I first heard of the case in 1899, and the incidents had been investigated by the chief reporter immediately on their occurrence in 1887. Notes on all the most important features of the case were made at the time and preserved. All these data were turned over to me in 1899 and I possess them still. They consist of the original notes or certificates alleged to have been found in the ground in connection with the dream. I have also a photograph of the certificates which was made at the time. In connection with these I have the original memoranda made by Prof. Jewett in 1887 and during the period of his personal investigation of the case. With these also goes his correspondence with the officials in the Bank of England. Lastly I have the pieces of the bottle said to have been found in the ground and containing one of the certificates. On my visit to the place to make a personal investigation I saw the three stones said to have been taken out of the ground by the finder and between which one of the certificates was said to have been found.

All these help to give character to the story which has been the subject of careful investigation and tend to show evidence in favor of important conclusions. The reader will have to judge of their value in the case. I report them as part of the data and results of investigation. The nature and importance of it appear in the sequel and will be variously adjudged according to the taste and interest of the reader.

The original papers which narrate the following facts were given me last winter some time after the holidays by the gentleman who investigated the case at the time and on the spot of their occurrence. The papers are a record of his account and narrative written down at the time, and I copy them exactly as he gave them to me. I have all the originals in my possession. The gentleman is an old friend of mine whom I met and had under me in the west when I had charge of an academy. He is now a professor in the State Normal School at Fredonia, New York. He told me of the facts on a visit last holidays just after my return from Boston and

the first set of experiments with Mrs. Piper. He sent the papers to me soon after his return to Fredonia, but I have been too busy to give my attention to them until now. But I may summarize the facts briefly before giving the documents that represent his notes and correspondence at the time.

Sometime near the middle of March in 1887 a young man of rather illiterate character had a dream in which a person appeared in citizen dress but claiming to have been a British soldier, and told the young man, whose name was Michael P. McCaffrey, that near a certain stump in the ground he would find a paper which he (the soldier) had received from the Bank of England for money which he had deposited there, and that he (the soldier) had been killed by the Indians. He told the young man to take two men (naming two persons in the neighborhood) with him and to dig in the place mentioned. This dream was repeated on the second night afterward and also for five consecutive nights following. But he did not obey the behest until the 2nd of July, when he went to try the effect of investigation, but without the two men who had promised to be present, and who afterward said that they had forgotten their appointment. But young McCaffrey with two of his brothers went as directed to this stump and dug at the place mentioned, and found a very old paper under and between some flat stones. On the following night of the 10th he dreamt that the same person as before appeared to him again, and this time in British uniform, and told him to dig deeper. McCaffrey at first hesitated to do so, but decided to try again as directed, and, as he remembers, on the second day thereafter did dig again somewhat deeper. After digging about a foot and a half he found a bottle and another very old paper better preserved than the first one, a large part of the writing upon which could be read without much difficulty. The papers were taken to Mr. B. F. Jewett the next day and soon afterward Prof. Jewett's attention was called to them.

In the holidays of this year Prof. Jewett took a journey home to investigate the facts, and was able to read the writing on the paper which had been discovered with the bottle. It purported to be a certificate of deposit on the Bank

of England for £4000 sterling with annual interest. The first found paper was indecipherable, but Prof. Jewett went to New Haven, Connecticut, the following summer to have the direction of a chemist in Yale University in deciphering this paper and was able with this aid to determine that it was another certificate of deposit, but calling for £10,000. But before this was done this McCaffrey stated to Mrs. Jewett, (Prof. Jewett's mother and she wrote the facts to her son on October 7th, 1887), that on the night of the 11th of September previous, he (McCaffrey) saw the same soldier as before in a dream and that the soldier told him that the first paper he found was ten thousand pounds and that he would get it. He was told that the Queen would help him, but nothing was said about the other paper and no name was mentioned. On the night of November 8th, the soldier appeared again and with him this time King George III, who corroborated the soldier's story, saying that he (George III) had given the soldier the certificates and deposited the money, which had been given him for safe-keeping by the soldier, in the Bank of England. They both then disappeared, but at no time did the soldier give his name. These allegations led to the experiments on the first paper as described.

The result led to correspondence with the Bank of England about the certificates, with the reply that there was nothing on record in its history regarding such certificates. Finally Prof. Jewett took his papers and went to England to see the bank officials personally about them. He was treated with uniform courtesy and interest. They gave the records and books a careful examination and found the following facts:

1. That the Bank of England had never paid interest on deposits.

2. That at the date of the first mentioned document the kind of paper upon which this writing was found had not been made; that the blue machine-ruled paper like that of this document was never used or made until after the beginning of the present century, the date of the certificates discovered in the ground being 1775.

3. That no unclaimed deposit in the Bank of England at

the present time was more than a very small part of four thousand pounds.

The enclosed letter is the one with which Prof. Jewett sent to me the original documents, and explains itself:

Fredonia, N. Y., Jan. 3, 1899.

Dear Friend Hyslop:

I send you in this mail two packages of matter upon the McCaffrey case. One package is a photograph of the paper found between the stones, showing also that portion of the other paper where the signature would naturally be. The whole package contains memoranda, the original papers, and copies of, or from, letters. The letters to the Bank are really the originals, copies having been sent. The other copies are from letters sent me from home. Naturally the original papers have not been handled except rarely and with special care, and they look just about as they did ten or eleven years ago. So as to the legibility of anything on the papers found between the stones you can judge pretty well for yourself. How the writing upon it could have made any impression upon this Mr. McCaffrey is entirely beyond my comprehension or apprehension. Of such a process I have no knowledge whatever either as a process or as a fact.

The separate copy of what I found on this paper, which is in the package, was made a few hours after discovery, and carried some seven or eight years in my pocket. Notwithstanding its dirt it may be as satisfactory as a fresh copy.

What I reported to you as having been written to Dr. Buckley seems upon review to have been written for him, but directed to Mr. Wead, of Malone, N. Y. A letter and copy of reply, both sent, will make this clear. The letters etc., are arranged nearly or quite in chronological order. Begin with the memoranda.

Nothing is sent of what the medium in the case said. Several letters from home, which are preserved, contain more or less copious accounts of interviews or sittings with her upon this matter. All this probably, however, would be of little interest and less value to you at present, in as much as, so far as I can tell from the letters, she did not enter the case until a number of months after the papers had been found and more or less about them published.

This is a strange case. As I stated, many would explain it on the hypothesis of fraud. In such case it would still remain to locate the young man in the matter. Was he in the fraud, or a tool merely? The latter hypothesis is very violent. My journey home at Christmas, 1887, was expressly for the purpose of examining the house with a view to this point, and the result told strongly against it. The former hypothesis has its difficulties.

My mother said at the time, and for some time afterward, that Michael was surely sincere in the matter. Whether she has at all changed her mind of late upon this point I do not know. You will notice in one of the letters some evidence in the young man's favor. The members of his own family at first made much fun of him. After he reported the vision informing him of the nature of the paper between the stones, they said, as reported, "Now we know you're crazy anyhow." Difficulties in the way of the hypothesis of genuine spirit communications are, of course, manifest.

It occurs to me that the original papers in this case would be material for a good test with Mrs. Piper. You said, I believe, that better results would be obtained if she had something connected with the person, or case, in her hand. The same was said of Mrs. Drake, the medium referred to above. I would ordinarily be much disposed to consider this only a part of the stage scenery. It can be readily furnished, however, in the present case; and if the matter were managed carefully, true results would be especially convincing. So I have thought of your having these papers put in Mrs. Piper's hands by some third person entirely ignorant of them. The papers should probably be in a sealed envelope, or in two, one in each, the person presenting them not to know even that the envelopes contain papers. The third person also, of course, should be one whom you and people in general can implicitly trust; and it seems that the papers should be returned to you still in the sealed envelopes.

I can vouch for the whereabouts of these papers since the summer of 1887, that they have always been kept in marked secrecy, and that no one has seen them for years. If any one has seen them for these many years, I cannot recall the fact. They have been laid away as devoid of present interest and unmolested. Further, no one knows of my sending them to you. My wife knows something of the original case, and that I am writing to you about it, also that I am sending you some papers pertaining to it, and a couple of photographs. She does not know that I am sending you the original papers, though she might suspect it if questioned, though I am not at all sure that she knows that I have the original papers. Still less does she know anything of my suggestion of using these papers with Mrs. Piper.

I have not had time to preserve or make copies of what I am sending, nor even of this letter. I think it would be best to preserve it also with the rest.

Sincerely your friend,

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.

P. S.—The fewer in this matter the better evidently, if it is

to go to Mrs. Piper. Until it has been there are not you and I enough?

F. N. JEWETT.

P. S.—Of course you are in these matters much more than I am, and all my suggestions may be superfluous. But many are interested in these papers, or would again be if they would help to solve any question. Though I am but one of three owners of the papers I have felt no hesitancy in sending them. It is doubtless much better that the others should not know of my sending them. I believe you said that your results with Mrs. Piper the first day were unsatisfactory, or almost nothing. Has this any bearing upon the value of the evidence finally obtained?

F. N. JEWETT.

The second letter was written the same day and mailed the next, and is evidently intended to add some omitted statements and correct misunderstandings that were thought possible. It has no special importance more than to make the record of the documents in my possession complete.

Fredonia, N. Y., Jan. 3, 1899.

Dear Hyslop:

A little may perhaps be added to my earlier letter to you of this date. Of course you will feel free to do with the documents whatever you think advisable. As to safeguards, of course, I need not write, and very likely wrote more than was necessary in this direction to-day. As to having only us two in the secret, etc., of course, there may be places where many witnesses are desirable. You are in the matter, or business, and can tell. Do not feel under any obligation to inform me in advance what you intend to do, nor as to what you have done, until the proper time comes.

I thought that perhaps your Society for Psychical Inquiry had some funds for purposes of research, and that it might, possibly, bear the expense of some work with these papers, or in such cases. I would not like to have you bear all expense on them yourself. I cannot yet expect that even Mrs. Piper could tell anything about those papers under such circumstances as I indicated today. If she could, the fact would manifestly be very significant.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT.

Seeing that there was in my friend's mind the supposition that we would try the experiment that he suggested and dis-

coursed upon at considerable length, I wrote discouraging any attempt of the kind, as an experiment that the present regime in the Piper case was reluctant to undertake. But my friend's conception of the Piper phenomenon remains still that regarding the ordinary medium, and he continues the hope in the following letter that the experiment may be tried. There is the usual confusion between phenomena that would prove supernormal powers and those that are necessary to prove personal identity. But in my later correspondence I endeavored to make clear that our interest in the case must now be historical, and that nothing short of sittings with Mrs. Piper by Mr. McCaffrey himself would be worth trying.

Fredonia, N. Y., Jan. 10, 1899.

Dear friend Hyslop:

Your letter of the 6th inst. is at hand. Permit me to make a suggestion or two concerning correspondence between yourself and Mr. McCaffrey. It would attract attention. Knowledge of it would probably get into spiritualistic (professionally) circles, and then you would be known in connection with the matter. Perhaps you would not consider this at all objectionable. It seems, however, that I could make inquiries, and even send or put any questions, without attracting such attention, and this perhaps more especially if I should do it in person. If both of us were present, which might in some respects be advantageous, the matter could probably be so arranged as to attract less attention than if you should go alone. I am not expecting to go home until next summer. The young man's address is Michael McCaffrey, Cook's Corners, Franklin Co., N. Y. Much of what he would tell you you will find in the memoranda, and other papers which I sent. The name of the young man's mother I do not know, except Mrs. McCaffrey, same address. His sister, who was working at my father's at the time of the dreams, and is there now, is Miss Lizzie (or Elizabeth) McCaffrey, whom you could reach better by directing to care of Benj. E. Jewett, North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.

As to Mrs. Piper and the experiment suggested, a negative result would mean little or nothing, but a positive and true result would be of *extreme* significance. Of course, or as a fact, I do not know whether it is claimed that such results can be obtained from her, or results at all similar, but it might be difficult to find a better case than this for such an experiment. With the permission of those in charge I think I could manage a sitting from here, and provide witness. One of the older business men of

Boston, whose home is a few miles from the city, is my father's cousin. I have been at his home, and have had some correspondence with him since. I think he would be willing to take the papers, sealed, to the sitting, and return them to me, still sealed, with the results. In such case I would have abundant witness here, or the necessary comparison might be witnessed in Boston, or at Columbia University.

Very truly yours,

F. N. JEWETT.

The following are the memoranda of Prof. Jewett made at the date mentioned at the end of the paper marked "Memoranda about the papers." The parenthesis, "Later date, Sept. 11, 1887," remains to be explained.

"Memoranda account of events connected with the finding of two papers by Michael P. McCaffrey, July 2, 1887, and a few days later, thought to be without doubt, the 10th of the same month."

"First direction, Mar. 18, 1887 (at night). Person in citizen's clothes. Said that (he had been a British soldier and that) there was hidden in the ground S. W. of a certain stump near the house a paper which he had received from the Bank of England for money which he had deposited there, that x (above) that he had been killed by the Indians. He told said Michael McCaffrey to take two men with him and to dig in the place mentioned upon the 2nd day of next July. (The two men were mentioned by name and live in the neighborhood, less than a mile distant.) In the morning Mr. McCaffrey remembered all this as a dream. On the second night afterwards he had a repetition of the dream; and also for five consecutive nights following.

"On the 2nd of July the men, who had said they would be present, failed to appear, the reason afterward given being that they had forgotten the appointment. About 5 o'clock in the afternoon of this day, Mr. McCaffrey, with two of his brothers younger than himself, James, 15 yrs. of age, and Patrick, 12 yrs., dug at the place mentioned, and found a very old paper under and between some flat stones.

"On the night of the 10th said Mr. McCaffrey dreamt (?) that the same person appeared to him again, this time in British uniform, and told him to dig deeper. Mr. McCaffrey

hesitated at first to do so, but did dig deeper the second day (as he believes), thereafter, on Tuesday, about 3 o'clock P. M. After digging about a foot and a half he found a bottle, the neck of which he broke with the crowbar which he was using. On [in] this bottle he found a paper, also very old, but much better preserved than the one above mentioned. The paper last found contained writing, a large part of which could be read without much difficulty.

"The papers were taken to Mr. B. F. Jewett the next day."

"[Later date, Sept. 11, 1887.]"

"[Taken by myself from said Michael P. McCaffrey at his home this 28th of Dec., 1887.

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.]"

The memorandum marked 2 is a "Copy of paper found in the bottle." The lines are drawn to represent it as nearly as possible to the original.

| | | |
|---|-----------------|------|
| with Interest annually | | |
| Thousand Pounds Sterling on the Bank of England | | |
| The Certificate is good for Fo.... | | |
| Certificate of deposit | | |
| £4000 | Bank of England | 1775 |
| | | |

....J

The third memorandum (marked 3) contains the following on the envelope which encloses the contents.

"The paper found between the stones; and copy of same after the application of ammonium sulphide."

The copy of the alleged bank note is as follows:

??000

Bank of England
this certificate

Ten Thousand Pounds

?nk of England

with Interest.

"Name of cashier."

The back of this copy is marked or contains a statement as to the time and place it was made, as follows:

"Copied by myself Aug. 1887 at New Haven, Conn., and partly from memory about two hours after the writing was made legible by the application of ammonium sulphide.

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.
Fredonia, N. Y., Oct. 10, 1887."

This is also marked "From paper between the stones."

Nothing can now be seen on the original paper enclosed except some traces of the blue lines, the spots of ammonium sulphide used in the attempt to decipher the writing, and very doubtful indications in only one place of any writing. The paper seems to have been merely the common lined writing paper, that might be described as the foolscap sort.

The memorandum marked 4 has on the envelope: "The paper found in the bottle."

This paper appears to be of the same kind as the first, but the traces of the writing are still quite apparent. The words and figures "£4000 Bank of England" are tolerably distinct still. I can only make out occasional words and letters of the rest. Part of the word "certificate" and of the phrase "with interest annually" is traceable, but perhaps because the copy is known.

The next memorandum represents copies of the letters sent by Prof. Jewett to the Bank of England inquiring whether any such papers as he had were on record or genuine. I give them in their order, with the reply of the Bank of England, except that one of the letters of the Bank was not sent to me with the original papers, but only a statement on the back of the one that was sent that a similar reply had been given to the writer by the Bank before.

100 Lyon St., New Haven, Conn., U. S. A.
July 28, 1887.

The Cashier of the Bank of England,

Dear Sir:

Enclosed please find a copy of a paper which has recently been placed in my keeping. I chose to make this copy at present instead of getting the paper photographed. I saw it for the first time two or three weeks ago. The paper is manifestly very old,

and some of the writing is not easily legible. What is copied, however, can be seen plainly enough to remove all doubt as to what the words are, and many of them are very plain. The paper is ruled lengthwise, as represented, with six lines, which are blue and quite well preserved. I can see no indication of there having been anything else stamped or printed upon the paper previous to the writing. The position of the words and figures has been preserved in the copy as nearly as possible. There is at least one word between "England" and "1775," which looks much like "date" or "dated," but I have not made it out with certainty. The last word in the third line also is not yet completely deciphered. That the first letter is "F" appears unquestionable. There also seem to be with this the first part of an 'o' and the last part of an 'r' in proper positions for the word "Four." Up to the present I have not been able to read any signature upon the paper, though there is a place for one and there are also markings that look as though they might be remains of a signature. No chemicals have been applied to the paper.

Quite likely this letter and the copy may furnish no ground for an opinion or conjecture as to what the real nature of the paper may be.

After about two weeks my address will be Fredonia, Chautauqua Co., N. Y., U. S. A.

Most respectfully yours,

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.

In place of the passage crossed out Prof. Jewett evidently substituted the following written on the side of the sheet and marked with a sign like an "x," which also is placed above the line before the word "still."

"Still it is possible that the facts given may have significance."*

(Second Letter.)

100 Lyon St., New Haven, Conn., U. S. A.
Aug. 8, 1887.

To the Cashier of the Bank of England,

Dear Sir:

It seems advisable to write again relative to the subject of my letter of the 28th ult., the paper purporting to be a certificate of deposit upon the Bank of England for four thousand pounds

* The part of the original letter which was not copied in that sent to the Bank of England was as follows:

"Still if they should lead you to form an opinion in the case, or even conjecture, which it would be your pleasure to express—at my expense—the leading purpose of this writing would be especially well accomplished."

sterling, dated 1775. Enclosed please find a photograph of the paper which is nearly of full size. The shape and texture of the paper are well shown, and also the position of the stains upon it. The writing does not appear, as the body of the instrument is written in blue ink. In some places this is still quite bright. As yet there has been no application of chemicals to the paper. By a casual observation one would not distinguish any signature upon it, but the marks when examined are increasingly indicative of the presence of one. So far as recognizable by color they are brown. On the lower left hand corner of the right hand half of the paper, on the lowest line, are a letter and device, or two letters, like this (B). Following are marks strongly suggesting the letter G; and a short distance after this is what looks very much like the letter l made somewhat short. Between these two there is space enough for a small letter like e or i, but I have not recognized any there. Still a little further to the right are a few traces which look as though they might be remains of small letters, but I have not been able to make them out. I think you will see the most of these at least upon the photograph.

If in your opinion the paper may be good, I could present it in person this summer (and if I could start as early as the 20th inst. with prospect of good connections for return, which latter will probably be the case).

Most respectfully,

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.

Beginning with the sentence "if in accordance," etc., and as indicated by crossing out, the remainder of the letter was changed before sending, according to notes of Prof. Jewett, to the following:

"If in accordance with your opinion, I would be pleased and obliged to be informed to this effect by cable at my expense. If the dispatch should reach me on the 19th inst. it would be in season."*

Until after that date my address will be as above, then it will be changed to Fredonia, Chautauqua Co., N. Y., U. S. A.

Most respectfully, &c."

*The part of the letter omitted in the copy sent to the Bank of England was as follows:

"If it is in accordance with your own judgment as advisable that I present the paper in person, I would be pleased to be notified to this effect by cable at my expense. If the dispatch should come as early as the 19th inst. I could take one of the steamers leaving New York the next day.

"Until that time my address will be as above: soon after that it will be Fredonia, Chautauqua Co., N. Y., U. S. A."

There is a copy of a letter dated September 20th, 1887, acknowledging the receipt of a letter from the Cashier of the Bank of England without stating the content of that answer. But Prof. Jewett states on the back of it, under date of January 2nd, 1899, that he had evidently used the letter of September 26th instead of this one. As the contents of that of September 26th are identical, almost to the word, this statement is probably true, and it will not be necessary to copy both letters here. Consequently I proceed to the next letter, having to omit the reply from the Bank of England because this reply has not been sent to me.

Short Beach, Conn., August 18th, 1899.

I have just received the original of the letter from the Cashier of the Bank of England which was omitted here in the account for lack of its presence with the documents sent me last winter. Comparison with the second letter from the same person shows that they are quite the same in import. It is noticeable also in this that there is no signature to the letter, as remarked in the earlier account of the second letter. The following is a copy of the letter just received, the paper on which it is written being exactly similar to the other.

| | |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|
| | Bank of England, London, E. C. |
| F. N. Jewett, Esqre., | 8 August, 1887. |
| 100 Lyon Street, | |
| New Haven, Conn. | |

The Chief Cashier begs to acknowledge the receipt of Mr. Jewett's letter of the 28th ultimo, and to inform him that nothing is known at the Bank of England of the voucher to which he refers.

Prof. Jewett's letter enclosing this is as follows:

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.
Aug. 16, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

Your letters of the 12th inst. are at hand. Enclosed please find letter from the Bank of England of "8 August, 1887," probably the one that you ask about. It was here. I have an impression that I received three replies from the Bank. I remember

none of them had any signature; only perhaps, as in the case of the one enclosed, what seems to be a private mark at the lower left hand corner.

For the present of course the documents may remain with you; the ultimate disposition of them need not be at present decided. Unsent letters, or parts of letters from my mother bearing upon the case at all, contain, I think, nothing but matter relative to the medium. It did not seem to me worth while to send this. I hope to make further inquiries about her in a few days.

I note with interest that you are, or have been, working up your sittings with Mrs. Piper.

Truly your friend,

F. N. JEWETT.

P. S. I expect to return to Fredonia Sept. 1st.

F. N. J.

(Third Letter.)

Fredonia, Chautauqua Co., N. Y., U. S. A.,

Sept. 26, 1887.

To the Cashier of the Bank of England, London.

Dear Sir:

The writer, Mr. Jewett, would acknowledge the receipt of the Chief Cashier's reply to the 8th ult., relative to a paper purporting to be a certificate of deposit for four thousand pounds upon the Bank of England, and would also state that something further has been made out at this date. Before the first letter on the subject some marks were seen above and to the left of the last figure in the date, but as they were not then made out, nothing was said about them. Under more favorable circumstances they have appeared plainly distinguishable so that the number for the year is 1775-7. The word preceding this number, which was said to suggest "Date" or "Dated," seems now to be more like "Septem.," while figures follow as if indicating the day of the month.

The evidence is very clear that at some time this paper was considered to be valuable.

Very respectfully submitted,

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.

The next letter was written concerning the other paper about which nothing had been said in previous letters, as it had been less distinct in its writing.

(Fourth Letter.)

Fredonia, Chautauqua Co., N. Y., U. S. A.,

Oct. 27, 1887.

To the Chief Cashier of the Bank of England, London.

Dear Sir:

It seems desirable to the writer, Mr. Jewett, to make mention at present of another paper associated with the one purporting to be a certificate of deposit for four thousand pounds upon the Bank of England, dated 1775-7. Both were put in my keeping at the same time. The one especially referred to at present seemed to be of less durable material than the other, had certainly suffered more from age, and was supposed to contain directions, or statements relative to the other paper. Traces of writing could be seen upon it but nothing could be made out, and a part of the paper was manifestly wanting. After writing about the first paper I applied ammonium sulphide to this one, when the following became legible:

)000

Bank of England
this certificate
Ten Thousand Pounds
with Interest

Name of Cashier.

This copy was made partly from memory about two and a half hours after the application of the sulphide. The writing had then faded so that only a part of it was legible. There was some indistinctness in the word "with," but not enough to render the word doubtful. On the line with the words, "Name of Cashier," were traces of writing, but so indistinct that I could not read them.

Since the making out of this writing, and without any knowledge of what I had found, parties interested have evidently come to think, if not to believe that this is an independent paper for the amount mentioned.

Very respectfully submitted,

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.

The next letter is the reply of the Bank of England to the preceding, and on the back of it Prof. Jewett makes a note of date January 2nd, 1899, to the effect that the previous letter of the Bank, which I have not received, was similar in character. His note is: "The Bank had made a similar reply relative to the alleged 4000 pound certificate. Franklin N. Jewett. Jan. 2, 1899." The Bank's letter is as follows:

(The reply to this communication
should be addressed Bank of England, London, E. C.,
"The Chief Cashier") 9th Nov., 1887.
F. N. Jewett, Esqre.,
Fredonia,
Chautauqua Co., N. Y.,
U. S. A.

The Chief Cashier begs to inform Mr. Jewett in reply to his letter of the 27th ultimo. that nothing is known at the Bank of England of the documents to which he refers.

As the Cashier has not signed his name to this letter there might arise from that fact a doubt whether the facts are as stated, or even whether it was written by him from the Bank of England, or whether any inquiry in the records of the Bank had been made. But the Bank letter head stands, as I have given it, *in print* above the date. On the back of the envelope is the stamped seal of the Bank of England, indicating that it is one of its envelopes.

The next memorandum is a copy of part of a letter from Prof. Jewett's mother. It is on this copy that the statement is made that the changes are immaterial. What I have is the following:

"North Bangor, N. Y., Oct. 7, 1887.

(From my mother.)

Mike helped thrash. He told me that the 11th of September that same person appeared to him in a dream as usual, and told him the first paper was ten thousand pounds, and was put there by a British officer, and that he would get it. He said the Queen would help him get it; spoke nothing of the other paper, never has heard a name mentioned. It is strange. Had I known this before I would have written you."

There is no memorandum marked 8, but in its stead was the letter not sent to the Bank of England, and whose contents were so nearly identical with the one sent that I did not deem it necessary to reproduce it. Consequently the 9th memorandum is a letter from a gentleman in Malone, New York, inquiring about the case. It is as follows:

Malone, N. Y., March 7th, 1888.

B. F. Jewett, Esq.

Dear Sir:—I am told that your son has taken a great interest in the dream of young McCaffrey last summer, and that he has made investigation of the facts in regard to it. I have a letter from Rev. Dr. Buckley, editor of the *Christian Advocate* of New York, who has made a study of such phenomena, and wishes me to obtain for him further information than was given in the newspaper accounts last summer. I will therefore thank you to send this letter to your son, with request to send me as full an account as he can do, without going over the same points covered by the published stories, and to add anything he may be able to about the certificate of deposit, the steps taken to recover it, and any other new facts. Dr. B. is looking into these matters in the course of writing a series of articles for the *Century Magazine*.

Yours very truly,

LESLIE C. WEAD.

The next letter was a reply to this of Mr. Wead's, and is as follows:

Fredonia, N. Y., Mar. 15, 1888.

Leslie C. Wead,
Malone, N. Y.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of the 7th inst. to my father relative to Mr. McCaffrey's dream has been forwarded to me. I may say at the outset that the case is incomplete, and that I think there are abundant reasons (at present) why it should not be published further. Will you please make this statement known to Dr. Buckley?

I have learned nothing out of harmony with Mr. McCaffrey's original and repeated statement of the case. My father and myself went to Mr. McCaffrey's upon the day when he told us of having found the paper. He went with us and showed us the place where he had dug. The hole was in a sandy soil, was freshly dug, and some two feet or more in depth. I stepped into it, and after clearing out the small amount of loose sand that had fallen back, examined the soil for four or five inches below where Mr. McCaffrey had stopped digging, and also the soil adjacent to this. For some three inches below the bottom of the hole the soil had evidently not been disturbed for a long time, but it appeared equally manifest that at some time it had been disturbed. The soil in question was in places darker than that round about at the same level, and in several small places was much darker, as if from surface soil or long decayed fragments of bark or

twigs. Moreover the layers in the sand, which were plain all around this portion did not continue through it. Below the depth of some three inches they were continuous; and the peculiar dark places in the soil ceases at the same depth. As to the certificate the Bank of England claims to know nothing about it, and no signature has been found upon it.

Probably Dr. Buckley has learned the more important at least of the particulars that were commonly reported in the vicinity last summer.

Very truly yours,

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT.

The 11th memorandum contains two documents; one an account of the experiments with chemicals to decipher the writing, and the other an account of the results obtained in England after the visit to the Bank personally, and written down on the same day.

The paper giving the account of the experiments with chemicals contains the indication that the experiments were on "July 21st, 1888," which is only two days later than the account of results written in London. But as the experiments were made in New Haven in July, 1887, and the first letter written to the Bank on the 28th of that month 1887, this account of the date of the experiments as having taken place on "July 21, 1888" must be an error for July 21st, 1887. But I give the account as it is, especially as the end of the record says: "Done at Gregg's Hotel, London, E. C. England," which at least indicates the time of making the record.

"Experiments July 21, 1888, upon the paper found in the bottle."

1. Lower right hand corner for about three-fourths of an inch from the right hand edge moistened with water and then with ammonium sulphhydrate. No indication of writing.

2. The space next left of this and about the same size extending to the middle (right and left) of the right hand half of the paper moistened first with dilute chlorohydric acid, then with dilute ammonium hydrate, and then with ammonium sulphhydrate. No indication of writing.

3. The space of about equal size as the former lying

immediately at the left of the crease passing through the middle of the right hand half of the paper from top to bottom moistened with a mixture of dilute chlorophydric acid and a solution of potassium ferrocyanide. No indication of writing.

The two blue dots above this portion of the paper, about one-half an inch apart and a little above the middle were made by the accidental falling upon it from the brush of the mixture used.

4. The space next to the left and about three-fourths of an inch in length extending to within about one-half an inch of the left edge of the right hand half of the paper was moistened slightly (if at all) with water and then thoroughly with ammonium sulphhydrate. No indication of writing.

5. The space next to the left and extending to the left edge of the right hand half of the paper treated in the same manner as the second space mentioned under 2 above. No indication of a signature. Faint outlines like the following **B** were about equally visible before and after the treatment.

The space covered by the above five was moistened with water and then with ammonium sulphide on the 19th inst at the Bank. No indication of a signature.

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT,
Fredonia, N. Y."

"Done at Gregg's Hotel, London, E. C., England."

This last statement seems to indicate that the whole set of experiments was made in London, but the signature and address "Fredonia, N. Y.," rather seems to indicate that at least a part of the record was made in this country, and only the fifth experiment performed abroad. Correspondence will determine this matter.

New York, September 27th, 1899.

In order to clear up the difficulty alluded to above I wrote to Prof. Jewett the following letter explaining the difficulty and asking several questions for the necessary information.

"Columbia University, New York,
"Sept. 24th, 1899.

"My dear Jewett:

I have just found time to copy your last letters in my report of the McCaffrey case and the statements of the medium with a certain difficulty that I noticed earlier require some personal questions of you.

In the notes that you made of your experiments on the papers there is the appearance of your being in London and New Haven at the same time. The paper which is a memorandum of the acid experiments is dated at its head 'July 21st, 1888.' At the end of it you say: 'Done at Gregg's Hotel, London, E. C., England.' Previous accounts indicate that the experiments were made in New Haven in July, 1887. I want, therefore, to have answers to the following questions, which I put on another sheet to be returned.

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP."

Prof. Jewett writes on the same sheet of this letter and returns it with the following note:

"Not the same experiments. Both the dates are correct. See the other sheet."

"F. N. Jewett."

The questions and further answers are as follows:

Q. Just when did you make the experiments in New Haven? A. "In 1887, probably in July."

Q. When did you make the notes of them reported to me, and indicating that they were made in London at the time you wrote the account of your presentation at the Bank? A. "This question and the first one do not fit together and into the circumstances."

Q. Did you make more than one account of the experiment? A. "Yes and No."

Q. Did you repeat some of the experiments in London? A. "No."

Q. Did Mrs. Drake have any chance to learn through neighborhood gossip or newspaper accounts that you had tried the acid experiments? A. I think not; yet a report of my New Haven experiment, the one upon the paper found between the stones, was sent home some time in the fall of

1887. I think that you will find that the correspondence will show this. I never knew that this report was ever published, or that for many years it ever became known in the neighborhood.

Your difficulty about the experiments has arisen from the fact that there were *two* papers upon one of which I experimented in New Haven and upon the other in London. In the former case the experiment was one, ammonium sulphide being the only reagent used; in the London case, upon the 4,000 pound paper, the experiments were multiform, i. e., different portions of the paper tested were treated differently. These tests were all applied in searching for a signature, and they were varied with a view to the possible success of some of the processes in case others failed.

If with the above as a guide, you still find any difficulty with the accounts please write me again.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT."

The next account is the second paper in this 11th memorandum. In the record of conclusions reached after presentation of the papers at the Bank of England in Person.

Gregg's Hotel,
22 Ironmonger Lane,
London, E. C., England,
July 19, 1888.

The following statement is made relative to two papers presented this day at the Bank of England by the undersigned Franklin N. Jewett accompanied by the undersigned Wallace H. Butrick.

One of the papers purported to be a certificate of deposit upon the Bank of England for four thousand pounds with interest payable annually, and bearing a date of which the year seems unmistakably to be 1777. This paper appears to be old, in a few places is not quite legible, and no signature could be distinguished upon it. The other paper is much more decayed; and manifestly a considerable portion from the right hand end is wanting. Upon this paper there was

no legible writing, but I, said Franklin N. Jewett, presented a copy of the writing upon it which I rendered temporarily legible in August 1887 by the application of ammonium sulphide. According to the writing thus made out this paper purported to be some kind of a certificate upon the Bank of England for ten thousand pounds with interest. The papers were taken to the chief accountant's office. He himself was absent but the official in charge stated that neither paper could possibly be genuine. The reasons given were the following:

1. That the Bank of England never had paid interest on deposits.

2. That at the date of the first mentioned document the kind of paper upon which it was written had not been made; that blue machine-ruled paper like that of this document was never used or made until after the beginning of the present century. Upon this point he consulted with the chief of the stationary department, who in turn consulted with the man having charge of the ruling of the paper.

3. That no unclaimed deposit in the Bank of England at the present time was more than a very small part of four thousand pounds.

Upon the copy of the second of the above mentioned papers the word deposit does not occur, yet when the copy was shown to the bank official he was equally positive with reference to this as with reference to the first one that it could not be genuine.

FRANKLIN N. JEWETT,
Fredonia, N. Y.

Witness,

Wallace H. Butrick,
New Haven, Conn.

The last and 12th memorandum, with the statement at the head of it that the copy is "with immaterial changes," a portion of a letter from Prof. Jewett's mother again. It is one year later still than the other documents just mentioned, and is as follows:

"Copy with immaterial changes."

"North Bangor, N. Y., Nov. 9, 1889.

.....

Mike was here this morning. He said the soldier came to him Wednesday night. The wind was blowing very hard, and the soldier said there was too much going on that night; he could not tell him anything, but would come again soon, and tell him what he wanted to know. Then he disappeared and the clock struck twelve. Last night he came again. He said he (the soldier) was coming to this country, had fourteen thousand pounds, and didn't want to take it with him. He gave it to King George the Third, and he gave him two certificates of deposit, one for four thousand pounds, and the other for ten thousand. Then another man appeared and stood beside the soldier. He (the latter) said "I am King George the Third. I gave him those certificates of deposit and deposited the money in the Bank of England for him, and I want it paid." Then they both disappeared. McCaffrey ("Mike") said the clock struck twelve, and that he never closed his eyes after that that night, that it was impossible for him to do so. He said it seemed lighter than daylight. He said the king had on a crown, and had a large sword; he never saw anything shine like his sword. * * * Mike is terribly impressed. I never saw him look as he looked this morning. His face was a blood red or darker, and his eyes looked as if they would leap from their sockets. He said the king's voice was very coarse and heavy. The last time he came last fall, he said the queen would help him get the money. * * * * *

Under date of November 15, 1889.

"Mike said he never knew England was ever governed by a king till that man told him he was George the Third of England; said he always thought it was governed by queens."

New York, August 30th, 1899.

In order to obtain contemporary accounts of the case as reported in the papers, if it was possible to do so, I wrote to

the Malone Palladium for copies of that paper containing any account of the affair. On my return this morning from the country I find a copy of that paper in my mail with a letter from the editor, and also replies to his inquiries for the matter of which I was in search. I give the correspondence in full before copying the contemporary account of the Malone Palladium.

F. J. Seaver.

ESTABLISHED 1835.
THE MALONE PALLADIUM.

C. L. Ames.

The Palladium Company, Publishers.
Malone, N. Y., Aug. 24, 1899.

J. H. Hyslop.

Dear Sir:—

Under separate cover we mail you copy of paper containing account of McCaffrey dream case. We did not expect to find it in our town correspondence, as we had forgotten where the incident occurred. Hence our delay in finding the article. Enclosed find letters from our North Bangor correspondent. If you consider \$1.00 a fair charge, all right, and if it is more than the paper is worth to you, pay whatever you see fit.

Yours very truly,
PALLADIUM CO.

The letters of their correspondent are as follows, the first one not being dated, nor the address indicated except by the writer of the above letter.

“Mr. Editor:

Your letter is received. There was such an incident that occurred in the north part of the town some twelve years or more ago. It was well authenticated at that time. I have shown your letter to neighbors of Mr. McCaffrey and they say there was such an incident and it was well verified. Mr. Jewett took a great interest in the case at that time and had the paper that was found in his possession. I will go and see him tomorrow and will send you the particulars if I get any and your letter.

Very truly yours,
A. W. GIBSON.

North Bangor, Aug. 22nd, 1899.

Palladium Co., Malone, N. Y.

Dear Sir:

In compliance with my promise I went down to see Mr. Jewett this morning. I found him at home, and as good luck

would have it, Mr. McCaffrey was there. They both say the finding of that paper in the ground was the last part of July, 1887, and the account was in the Palladium and in the Farmer soon after. Mr. McCaffrey says it was in the Utica Saturday Globe about the same time. The article in the Globe was written by a Malone man. It is a very mysterious case to say the least.

Very truly yours,

A. W. GIBSON."

In the Malone Palladium for July 21st, 1887, the correspondence from North Bangor contains the following account of the case. There is no signature to it.

"Perhaps nothing has ever so stirred the mind of the public in town as the dream, and its fulfillment, of Michael McCaffrey, a son of Patrick McCaffrey, who lives about half a mile east of Cooks Corners. Michael is a single man, about 26 years of age, and he says that on the night of March 18, 1887, he dreamed that he went to a pine stump west of the house, 10 or 15 rods, and on the west side of the stump he dug and found something valuable, but could not tell what it was, and he says further that on the night of March 20th, 'I had another dream. I saw a man of about medium size, and he told me to take two men with me on the second day of July, naming the men (E. Southworth and Joseph LaBarge) and go and dig down on the west side of the stump near a large root. He said he was a soldier in the British army, and had money on deposit in the Bank of England. He told me that I would find a valuable paper there. He said that he was killed by the Indians, and he had no relatives living, and that this paper was buried between two and three feet deep on the southwest side of said pine stump; and I dreamed the same dream five nights more, and on July 2nd, as the men did not come, I took two of my younger brothers and went and dug until I came to three flat stones. They must have been brought some little distance, as there is no stone in the soil. I took them out and between the two lower stones I found a paper about three by five inches, and supposed it was the paper I was to dig for. On the paper was writing, but I could not make it out. I then dug no further, but on the night of July 7th I again dreamed that I saw the same man, this time dressed in the uniform of a British soldier, and he told me to go back and dig deeper. I went back on the 12th of July, took with me a spade and a bar, and as the ground was very hard, after digging with the spade awhile I took the bar, and while using this I struck a bottle. Upon removing the dirt, I found that I had broken the bottle, but in the bottom I found a paper with writing and figures on it. I

had dug a foot and a half lower than before. The paper looked old and yellowish—black and mouldy in spots—and on it were the writing and figures as follows: '£4000. Bank of England. This certificate is good for four thousand pounds sterling on the Bank of England, with interest annually. Dated Dec. 18th, 1775.'

This is as correct a statement as I can gather from the young man himself. He is considered honest and truthful in the neighborhood where he lives. Now I would like to know by what agency this has been revealed to him. The papers are in the hands of B. F. Jewett."

An editorial note in the same paper of the same date, and on another page remarks as follows on the incident and correspondence.

"Our North Bangor correspondent recites a story this week which is exciting that community, and which has given rise to hopes, in one or two breasts at least, of realizing a moderate fortune. But if there is no more to the 'find' than the correspondent copies, great expectations will hardly materialize. Banks do not often honor certificates of deposit which are unsigned. But, then, perhaps there is a signature and our correspondent has neglected to copy it."

New York, August 31st, 1899.

I have just received copies of the *Malone Farmer* and *Utica Globe* in each of which is found an account of the dream and discovery of the papers purporting to be certificates of deposit in the Bank of England. The account in the *Farmer* is for July 20th, 1887, and is as follows, having been given by the correspondent of that paper living in North Bangor.

"A BRITISH SOLDIER'S MONEY."

"Strange Experience of a Young Man at North Bangor."

"His Sleep Disturbed by the Spirit of an Officer who was Slain by the Indians—Directed to Dig for Wealth—What He Found."

"A correspondent at North Bangor to the *Plattsburg Telegram*, sends a strange story with the postscript: 'There is no doubt about the facts being as above stated, whatever the explanation may be.' It involves a combination that is

certain to excite interest. The supernatural revelation of hidden treasure calls for a quickening of human cupidity.

North Bangor, July 14th, 1887.

Editor Telegram:—Below I give you an account of a very strange affair that happened in this town.

Last March a young man by the name of Mike McCaffrey, who lives with his folks about four miles north of this place, had a dream in which a man appeared to him. He (the stranger) was a British officer who was killed by the Indians. He directed McCaffrey to go to a certain stump and dig on a certain side of it, and he would find a fortune awaiting him. (I should have said before that McCaffrey is about 29 years of age. He has always stayed at home, being very bashful.) On the third night thereafter, the British officer again appeared in McCaffrey's dream, and each succeeding night until the dream had been six times repeated. On the first appearance the apparition had instructed the dreamer to get Joe Labarge and Egber. Southworth and go with them on the 2nd of July and dig by the stump described. McCaffrey communicated with the parties named, but they failed to put in an appearance, so he went to the place accompanied by his two little brothers.

They commenced to dig. When about eighteen inches below the surface two flat stones were encountered. Between these was a piece of paper upon which there was writing which could not be readily deciphered. McCaffrey discontinued his labor and took the paper to his home.

Two nights after these occurrences the Britisher again appeared to McCaffrey, this time arrayed in the uniform of a British colonel. McCaffrey says the well-burnished brass buttons were just as plain as could be. The officer was indignant that McCaffrey had not continued the digging, and commanded him to get Labarge and Southworth and continue the hunt. This was done on July 11th. About four feet below the surface was found a bottle with the neck broken off. In the bottle was a certified check on the Bank of England for £4,100, dated 1775. The valuable document is in the hands of B. F. Jewett, of this place, whose son has given it a critical examination with a magnifying glass. The writing is faded. The rate of interest and signature can not be made out. The check is kept in a dark place and as nearly as possible away from the atmosphere. An investigation will be had, and if profit accrues it will be equally divided between the finder and holder.

Mr. E. A. Hyde, our correspondent at North Bangor, gives the above affair attention and says: 'After a personal inves-

tigation and consultation with the people residing in that immediate vicinity, I do not hear a hint by any of his neighbors that this is a 'put up job,' but all accord to him (McCaffrey) integrity of purpose.' Mr. Hyde says the hole dug by McCaffrey at the stump is about the size of a post hole and the flat stones taken out were about one foot square each. That the bottle was a small, round bottle which was broken at the top by the crow-bar used in digging. Mr. Jewett, who has the paper found in this mysterious manner, preached at the Baptist church, this village last Sunday. He will have it examined by an expert. Whether it has value or not, the method by which McCaffrey found it is mysterious and if no fraud is being perpetrated will tend to make him a second Daniel or the great dreamer of the nineteenth century at least. Barnum will want him and he should be prepared for a call from 'the greatest show on earth.'

In the *Utica Saturday Globe* the account is as follows, and is dated July 23rd, 1887:

"HIDDEN TREASURE."

"REVEALED TO A YOUNG MAN BY A GHOST."

"The Spirit of a British Officer Comes
in the Night and Directs Michael
McCaffrey Where to Dig for
Buried Wealth."

Malone, N. Y., July 22.—This (Franklin) county is wildly excited over the remarkable experience of Michael McCaffrey, of North Bangor. McCaffrey is a young man, about 25 years of age, who resides with his parents on a farm at the northeast corner of Bangor. He has an excellent reputation among his neighbors for honesty and truth. On the 18th of last March he dreamed that there was something of great value buried near a large pine stump in the pasture about 40 rods west of the farm house. Two nights afterward this dream was repeated. There appeared to him at his bedside the apparition of a man apparently 50 years of age.

HIS GHOSTLY VISITOR

told McCaffrey that he had been killed by the Indians many years ago, and that previous to his death he had buried a valuable

document near the stump about which the young man had dreamed. The ghost directed McCaffrey to go with a spade and pick on July 2nd and unearth the document referred to.

This midnight visitor also directed that Joe Labarge and Egbert Southworth, men living near-by, be employed to assist in the excavation. On the third night thereafter the apparition again appeared at McCaffrey's bedside, and he repeated his visits at frequent intervals some five or six times more previous to July 2nd, and retold each time the story of the hidden fortune. McCaffrey proceeded with the work as directed, through [thought] Labarge and Southworth did not come on to assist him as they had engaged to do. With the aid of two younger brothers, McCaffrey dug to the depth of 18 inches, where he

ENCOUNTERED TWO FLAT STONES

12 or 15 inches square. Between these stones McCaffrey found an ancient-looking paper on which there had once been some writing, but it was now almost illegible. Taking the paper to the house, the search was abandoned for a time. Two or three nights after this vision again appeared to the young man, arrayed in the full uniform of a British soldier, the red coat and brass buttons being distinctly seen. The spirit was now fully materialized and appeared to be very much annoyed because the search for the buried treasure had been abandoned so readily. The spirit ordered McCaffrey to get the young men previously designated to assist him and continue the digging where it was commenced. On Thursday, the 14th inst., the labor was resumed, McCaffrey being assisted as before by his brothers. On going down about three feet farther a large glass vial, or small bottle, was unearthed and in the bottle was a piece of paper about the size of a bank note, discolored and dingy, and bearing the marks of extreme great age. The figures '£4000' are plainly to be seen on the upper left hand corner, and the date '1775' is legible also, but much of the writing is badly defaced. Those who have examined it carefully believe the document is a certificate of deposit in the

BANK OF ENGLAND

for £4000. These ancient papers are in the keeping of responsible parties who will make a thorough investigation and ascertain their value. The materialized old hero informed McCaffrey that he had no heirs here in the flesh, and that he would donate him his entire fortune and expressed the hope that he would succeed in establishing his claim and obtain the £4000 and the accrued interest which in the 112 years that have intervened will amount to a handsome sum of money. A portion of the 'remains' of the top of the pine tree that grew on this stump are still lying upon

the ground, and they show that when they stood erect they helped form a veritable giant of the forest. The tree must have loomed up far above any other treetops in that vicinity. The tree must have been 200 feet high, and a conspicuous landmark that when once seen could easily have been discovered again."

I have no theory as yet for which I would contend regarding this case. Professor Jewett has evidently been very painstaking in his effort to find out the truth as best he could without any previous knowledge of phenomena like this, and hence with no experience to guide him. The events are too far in the past for any likely hope that they can now be successfully investigated with satisfactory results in favor of any theory. I hope to get further information from Professor Jewett which will represent documentary matter contemporary with the events. But the points which ought to have been investigated at that time are probably beyond further verification or denial. So much of the case appears to be exposed to suspicion from the evident spuriousness of the "certificates of deposit" that it may not appear worth the effort to pursue it further. But I find in this very possibility an incentive to see what can still be ascertained about it, though there are complications and incidents that make the hypothesis of fraud a very involved one.

But the suspicious incidents are numerous enough to justify the toleration of certain suppositions upon which to work in the case, and these I have formed in somewhat the following manner, and by them we may attempt to measure the facts as here reported. The suppositions are as follows:

- (1) That the whole experience and dreams of young McCaffrey were imagined.
- (2) That in addition to imagination he has lied about the facts in what he reported to others.
- (3) That the first dream, which we may suppose to have been genuine, both gave rise to the others and offered an incentive for others to play a practical joke upon the man.

- (4) That the dreams themselves were suggested to him as a somnambule subject by some outside party for the purpose of playing a trick upon the community.

I think the study of the incidents in the case will show very little to support the first two hypotheses, to say nothing of the scepticism of Professor Jewett and relatives on this point which they seem to have kept in mind when investigating it. I doubt very much whether the fourth hypothesis has any better standing, as I know little in experience except a *priori* assumption that would favor it. It might be true, but I see nothing in the facts to favor it, and only in the circumstance that there is nothing in these facts to contradict it is there anything to justify its possibility. I therefore discard it as improbable, though keeping it in reserve for the failure of the third as representing the most likely conception in the case if we are not to tolerate anything genuine in it suggesting the supernormal of some kind. Of course, I know nothing to prevent the first or second hypothesis from being true, except their violence in comparison with the facts and the breakdown of scepticism in those who investigated the case. Consequently I have prepared a set of questions for the parties concerned, which are directed with the purpose of ascertaining such facts as may confirm or deny the third hypothesis. The result of this inquiry will be reported below.

While writing out the above report of the documents sent me last winter, and for the purpose of securing more information, I wrote to Professor Jewett for further details on points left obscure or not sufficiently emphasized in the papers I was holding. I give below the questions which I directed to him and the answers which he gave to them in reply.

1. Have you any original communications from Michael McCaffrey himself?

Ans. "No, all oral."

2. Have you any more letters of your mother regarding it? I should like to have all that can be gotten from both of them.

Ans. "None that I thought you would want. I have one or two containing matter referring to a sitting (?) with the medium; but no more that I know of pertinent to McCaffrey.

3. Could McCaffrey and his family be induced to give their accounts of his experience either in writing or to a stenographer?

Ans. "Undoubtedly. I can say, yes, positively, for the man and his mother. The others probably would not object."

4. Could you give me the names and addresses of all the persons you know in McCaffrey's neighborhood and who could testify to what they know or heard at the time, and tell what is to be thought of McCaffrey's character, or answer all questions that it may be necessary to ask in regard to matters of this kind?

Ans. "Egbert Southworth, Cook's Corners, Franklin County, New York. Samuel Southworth, North Bangor."

5. Can you name any of the papers in which accounts of the affair were published at the time?

Ans. "Not positively. My sister thinks that mention of the case was made in both the *Malone Palladium* and the *Malone Farmer*. These are weeklies published at Malone, New York. The papers were found the 2nd or 3rd of July, 1887, and whatever these weeklies may have printed upon the matter must have been published soon afterward, probably within one or two weeks."

I wrote also a second letter with additional questions. I transcribe the entire letter with Professor Jewett's answers to my questions embodied in the transcript, as he wrote the replies on the sheet that I sent him.

Short Beach, Conn., August 5th, 1899.

My Dear Jewett:—Since writing you yesterday, I have been at work on the papers and find that there are points on which information is important.

In your copies of original documents you say that the changes made are immaterial, but in our records we like to

have the account exactly as it was without a variation. Please, then, to consider the question of putting the originals of all documents still in your possession in the files of the Society. I do not ask that you do so, but only to consider its propriety. Full copies, if the originals are examined by the officers of the Society, may suffice. But we should like to have your letters and documents in full. Of course your memoranda and other papers sent me, I understand to be exactly as originally written. Now for my questions.

1. How soon after the discovery of the papers did you see them personally?

Ans. "The same day, or the next day. The papers were found, as I understand, in the afternoon."

2. Who is the B. F. Jewett mentioned in the case? Your father?

Ans. "Yes."

3. Can you report all the incidents that led up to the consultation of the medium, Mrs. Drake? Who was she, what her character, reputation, etc?

Ans. "The results of limited inquiry about the Mrs. Drake, the medium, are entirely favorable. She was a professional medium, and I understand that she was such before her marriage. She was then Miss Maud(e) Lord, and seems to have been well known in spiritualistic circles in and about Boston. For a number of years after her marriage her home was in California. An informant, however, thinks that for the last year or two she has been further east. For remainder of reply to this question see accompanying letter."

4. Get the exact time of the consultation if possible, or as nearly as can be to the finding and publication of the accounts.

Ans. "Seemingly one or two weeks after the finding."

5. What was the nature of the suspected fraud that led you to examine the house, and what facts told against that supposition?

Ans. "Manufactured visions. The size and structure of the house, and the fact that no other members of the family, as stated, were disturbed on the occasion in question, or knew

anything of the presence of other persons in the house, or anything of the visions until the latter were told by the young man himself."

6. Was the second paper found "on" or "in" the bottle? It appears that you record it with an "on" and an interrogation after it, and then in the envelope containing it you say: "The paper found *in* the bottle."

Ans. "The paper (this one) was found *in* the bottle."

7. Did the young man, McCaffrey, have any more dreams about the matter after your investigations and report from England?*

Ans. "Yes, one or more; I think two or more."

8. Has he had any experiences in recent years connected with it?

Ans. "Nothing but the dreams. I hope to report more definitely upon these dreams."

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP.

P. S.—Please return this letter with answer as it will save copying.

The letter referred to above and which further answers the questions is as follows:

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,
Aug. 10, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

Your three letters have been received. Reply has been deferred in endeavoring to obtain data. Only reply to 1st and 2nd, enclosed, is now attempted. I hope to be able to reply to the 3rd soon. Since receiving your letters I have had an interview with Mrs. McCaffrey, and a short one with Michael. He is here now to give me a longer one, in fact with the purpose of giving me a connected history of the case, so far as his experiences enter into it. I propose to send you his narrative as soon as at all practicable.

It seems to me that something approaching this is among the documents which I sent you. I believe that the documents sent you were all numbered, and that a list of the same was sent with them, perhaps on, or in the envelope. I am afraid that I did not

*I wrote and sent this question before I came to the letters of Prof. Jewett's mother, where I found it answered.—J. H. H.

preserve a copy of the list, a counterpart of mine, both for yourself, and so that in case of need I can also obtain a copy. The incidents leading to the consultation of Mrs. Drake were few. A brother-in-law (of) Mrs. Drake suggested it, and it followed soon, without, as affirmed, any knowledge of Mrs. Drake. More of this later.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT.

Short Beach, Conn., August 14th, 1899.

I have just received two letters in answer to my further inquiries referred to above where I expressed my intention to test the third hypothesis quite carefully. I copy first the letter which I sent to Prof. Jewett.

"Short Beach, Conn., August 6th, 1899.

My dear Jewett:

I send some questions for you to answer and some for you to put to McCaffrey himself. But I should like to know from you what were some of the theories in the neighborhood at the time of the dreams and discovery to account for the affair. Were any adroit means employed to sift the knowledge and conduct of the men who claimed that they had forgotten their appointment to be with McCaffrey at the first digging? Did the results of your trip to England alter anybody's theories about it? What opinions did McCaffrey's family finally form about it?

I send on the next sheet the questions to be put to McCaffrey, and I vary them somewhat so that you can probe him in every way necessary to get at the facts. Questions do not always in one form indicate exactly what is wanted. Take notes of his answers, or full answers if you can. Have him answer no faster than is necessary to get what he says. After study I have a clue to the possible source of the affair. I may be mistaken, but I shall try the case on this tack.

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP.

P. S. Now some questions further for you after writing out those for McCaffrey. It is possible that you may find it best to allay suspicion regarding my intention in some of the questions by answering them yourself and not by putting them to McCaffrey, for instance such questions as 30. You use your own judgment on this. Perhaps, too, you had better be cautious about question 15 also. Hence I shall suggest for your own answers, in case it is either impolitic to ask them of McCaffrey, or unlikely that his judgment would do in the case, the following questions: 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 30, and 32.

You may perhaps also be able better to answer questions 24, 25, and 26.

Please to return this letter and questions with your reply as it will save copying.

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP."

The following is Professor Jewett's reply to my letter after making careful inquiry in regard to my queries. The questions and answers to them by Mr. McCaffrey himself will follow this letter.

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,

Aug. 10, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

Since writing you this morning I have spent some hours with Mr. McCaffrey, at intervals consulting his sister, who works here, my sister and my mother upon various points of the case. Upon some minor points his memory is not quite as clear as, according to the memory of others, it seemed at first. These points are few, and some or all of them will be noticed upon an examination of the enclosed answers.

I trust you may be able to read the answers without much difficulty. I thought it might be convenient for you to have them with the questions. In some cases the grounds for the answers are given with the answers; in the other cases they are the results of more or less numerous inquiries and of what knowledge of the circumstances and persons I myself have had. Of course I cannot vouch for what I did not know, as for the home habits of the McCaffrey family; but I have great confidence that they were precisely as represented; and I can say the same of the other alleged facts standing in similar relation to the whole case.

Mr. McCaffrey has shown no sign of suspicion or unwillingness to answer; he has sometimes, however, delayed his answers for a few moments evidently in order to get his memory clear.

The brothers in the family were aged 7, 12, and 14 or 15 years at the time of the earlier dreams, and the digging. It appears that the family never had any English history, or any history at all worth mentioning. There were also three sisters in the family then, staying at home, two of them older than the above mentioned boys; but so far as I can learn, and so far as appears, there is no more ground for suspecting them than for suspecting any of the other members of the family.

So far as I have learned none of the family has any theory or opinion of the case, except that it is mysterious. They seem not

to know how to explain it. At certain times some if not all of the family were quite ready to say that the young man was crazy or deluded. Perhaps a partial or complete exception, however, should be made in the case of the father and mother after the papers were found. At one time Mr. McCaffrey, senior, seemed to anticipate the getting of the money. This was in July, 1887. He was sick with a cancer at the time, and died in the following February. You will remember that my journey to England was in the summer of 1888. It may be well to notice here that none of the family seemed to have any confidence in the dreams before the finding of the papers, not even the young man himself. He says that upon the failure of the two men to come as witnesses he did not want to ask others to come for fear they would call him a fool.

One of the two men here in question, Egbert Southworth, is a man of intelligence, character and reputation. He need not be suspected at all. He also has no suspicion of McCaffrey. He is *entirely confident* that the young man is a conscious party to no fraud whatever in the matter. This is essentially what Mr. Southworth told me only a few days ago. He thinks that the fabrication of such a scheme would have been entirely out of keeping with McCaffrey's character, or his ability and knowledge. He has known McCaffrey since the latter was a small boy, and had him as a pupil in school for several terms.

The other of the two men, a Joseph Labarge, was a reputable blacksmith at Cook's Corners. I never knew him. Nothing has come to my knowledge at all tending to discredit him in connection with this matter. It appears that he still owns property at Cook's Corners, but his present address is quite probably Mesina, N. Y., though I cannot be positive upon this point.

It has occurred to me to ask: In case either of these men was fraudulently connected with the matter why did he suffer the evidence to be weakened by his absence at the digging?

I may mention that some 10 or 11 years before any of these dreams a large number of stumps had been piled around the one of this case and burned, with hope, as reported, of burning this one also, the attempt not being successful. This was done by the same McCaffrey family.

Since commencing this letter I have learned more about the time of the consultations with Mrs. Drake. My letter of this morning would create in this particular a wrong impression, though probably not a seriously wrong one. There were three consultations, or visits to the medium. The first was by my mother and sister, the second, on the day following (as reported) by my father and McCaffrey, and the third by McCaffrey some time the following fall. The first visit was made in the spring (probably May) of 1888, some 10 months or more after the find-

ing of the papers. At McCaffrey's second visit the medium said that the records were not in the Bank (of England) but in an abbey, and added, "He will have to go again." She also told him at this time that he would get his money in 1889. This is as McCaffrey reports it, and as my mother and sister remember it as reported at the time. It may be fair to add here that Mr. Drake, husband of the medium, said that they (mediums) were not sure to be correct in dates.

The latest dreams in this case, Mr. McCaffrey says, were about three years ago, or some months less than three years. At this time there were two or three dreams in quick succession, in which McCaffrey was told that the matter would be settled in May, 1900, on the 17th or 27th of the month, as remembered. He also saw upon a board, as a blackboard, a picture of a steamboat bearing the name "Umbria," and he says he could see my father and myself upon the boat. He says that he did not know that there was any steamboat having this name.

One of your questions (or more) refers to the location where the papers were found. Did I not send you among the documents a copy of a letter bearing upon this point particularly? I ask because I do not wish to lose the copy of that letter. Also did my documents contain an account of my examination of the McCaffrey house at Christmas time, 1887? Possibly this was not written out in full. If convenient I would like to get some time a copy of the list of documents sent you, or to know that you have such a copy.

I hope to learn something more of Mrs. Drake next week. Can I do anything more in the case while here? We expect to return to Fredonia the last of this month.

Sincerely as ever,

F. N. JEWETT.

There arrived in the same mail the following letter, which as is stated, is much of the nature of a postscript to the one above.

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,
Aug. 11, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

This is much of the nature of a postscript to the larger letter of yesterday. I learn that one of my replies sent you yesterday should be somewhat modified. It stated that I saw the papers the day they were found or the day following. It appears that some days, not many, elapsed between the finding of the paper between the stones and finding the one in the bottle. I understand that I saw the papers the next day after the one in the bot-

tle was found. This was the only one that at the time was considered to be valuable. It was supposed probable that the one between the stones merely contained directions or explanatory matter relative to the other one.

So far as I can learn there was quite a diversity of general opinion or conjecture in the neighborhood about this matter, but nobody had any full solution of it. Some believed that the dreams were genuine, and some did not. Some said that they believed the family, or some members of it, knew all about the papers beforehand, and had known about them for a long time; and all this, so far as appears, without any positive evidence. This latter view, or impression, was, I think, in some cases connected with a nebulous foul play theory reaching back a generation or more. According to this view the party or parties who hid the papers believed them to be genuine. In support of this theory I have found no evidence whatever; only a statement a number of years ago to the effect that there was a rumor, perhaps not widely spread, that a generation or so earlier, a man had suddenly disappeared under circumstances casting suspicion upon some of the McCaffreys. I have a *faint* impression that the man was a peddler. The real, or legendary, disappearance of this man was connected with the papers.

As to deceiving the young man by any outsider: The house was (is) small, with doors and windows, I think, regularly fastened at night. Eight or nine persons slept in it regularly, the youngest being 7 years old. The father and mother slept down stairs, on the first floor, and the six or seven children in the chamber. The latter was not large and was almost practically one room, and only one stairway led to it. The chamber had only three windows, two on the west end and one on the east end, and these were all very near or beside beds that were occupied. Now granting that outside parties could have imposed upon the young man after the manner of dreams, provided they could have reached him, the situation seemed to me to make it extremely difficult for them to do so even once without detection by other members of the family. The dreams up to that time had in some if not all cases been attended by illumination, and in all cases by bodily presence and talking. Of course the number of dreams both before and after the finding of the papers made the case manifold stronger against the theory of outside deception. Also the reported entire ignorance of any member of the family of the dreams or of any disturbance at the times of the dreams must of course be reckoned with in considering any theory of inside deception.

I am not preserving copies of these letters to you, and yet I would rather not lose the record which they (and the answers)

contain. So if they should not be wanted elsewhere I would like to get them sometime in the future and keep them with the other documents.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT.

The following are the thirty-two questions which I sent to Professor Jewett to be answered by McCaffrey, and I transcribe with them the reply, as explained in the above letters.

1. What kind of citizen's clothes did the man appear to wear in the first dream? Were they of the kind worn to-day, or were they like those of a past age, say a century ago?

Ans. "McCaffrey says: He always had on a red jacket and a cap, the latter thought to be black and of fur. As to other articles of dress, uncertain, but quite sure that he always had a sword."

2. Had McCaffrey read any books about England, its history, manners, life, etc., of the time represented in the dream?

Ans. "Had never read any English history."

3. What kind of uniform appeared in the later dreams?

Ans. "See answer to 1. His uniform was always the same."

4. Describe the appearance of George III.

Ans. "Rather short, thickset, sixty or sixty-five years old, with brilliant gown or robe, crown upon his head and sword by his side."

5. Had McCaffrey been in the habit of thinking about getting rich, or wishing to find money? That is to say, did he do any day-dreaming on it?

Ans. "No; says not. His mother also says she knows nothing of the kind."

6. Had the family come from England or Ireland, and did McCaffrey ever think they might get money from the old country? That is to say, did he ever wish or day-dream over this idea?

Ans. "No wishing or day-dreaming of the kind at all.

The father was a baby when brought from Ireland, the mother was born in Canada, of Irish descent."

7. Had he ever had any dreams about money before or since?

Ans. "No."

8. Had he ever talked with the two men who failed to meet their appointment at the digging about making money?

Ans. "He says, never, and this seems manifestly true, certainly as regards Mr. Southworth; I have never known Labarge."

9. How soon after his first dream did these men know of it?

Ans. "About three months."

10. Why did he postpone the digging until July?

Ans. "Because he was so directed. This direction was given in the first dream and in each succeeding dream, fourteen or fifteen, until the time of the digging, July 2, 1887. These dreams were largely duplicated."

11. What did these men say about the dream at the time?

Ans. "Labarge said: 'I will come; there may be something in it.' Southworth said he would come, and then warned McCaffrey against claim agencies."

12. Did these men ever express any theory as to the origin of the case?

Ans. "None that I know of. Mr. Southworth evidently has none now."

13. Did they ever show any change of mind regarding the case?

Ans. "Seemingly none."

14. Were they warm friends of McCaffrey or not?

Ans. "They were not; but acquaintances and on good terms."

15. Were they men in the habit of playing practical jokes, or did they ever play any at all?

Ans. "Evidently not; Labarge quiet and reticent; and Southworth entirely above any suspicion in the case."

16. What was their general standing and reputation in the community?

Ans. "Good, see just above."

17. What "pals" did they have in the neighborhood, and did these persons know of the dreams?

Ans. "Seemingly none. Southworth would have no 'pals.'"

18. How far from the stump was the place in which he dug for the papers?

Ans. "Inside of the large roots."

19. Did McCaffrey have to dig at more than one place before finding the right place.

Ans. "Had to vary about two feet but only in one direction. (His statement now.) Others remember that, as reported at the time, the variation was even less."

20. How did he find the place to dig, if he did not try several places?

Ans. "As far as he remembers he was guided by the positions of the roots. My sister says positively that, as reported of course, the old soldier told him in what direction from the stump to dig, and how far from it, and this has always been my understanding on this point."

21. In what kind of a field were the hidden papers? Was it a pasture field, or one that was under cultivation?

Ans. "Pasture; but had been plowed, though not up between the roots, where the papers were found."

22. Had the field ever been under cultivation at all?

Ans. "See above, 21."

23. How deep down was the first paper found?

Ans. "About one and one-half feet."

24. Describe fully the kind of bottle found in the place at second digging; shape, size, kind of glass, etc.

Ans. "Seemingly old style, round; diameter at bottom two inches outside, only one-sixteenth more further up; top broken in; glass rather thin."

25. Has the bottle been kept or not, and if so can it be produced?

Ans. "The pieces are here, the bottom part being entire."

26. Is the region a stony one? That is, are there plenty of stones about?

Ans. "No; the immediate locality is sandy. There are many stones not far away."

27. Were there fresh signs of dirt that led him to dig at the special place for the papers?

Ans. "None at all. This has always been one of the plain features of the case, as reported to me. McCaffrey says the place was covered with grass turf."

28. Was any one besides the members of the family staying in the house at the time of the dreams?

Ans. "No."

29. Was McCaffrey in the habit of sleep-walking, or did he ever do any of this at all, either to his own knowledge or that of others?

Ans. "No, as reported."

30. Were any of his brothers in the habit of playing practical jokes?

Ans. "No, as reported."

31. Did either of the brothers when they went with him to dig, indicate where to dig?

Ans. "No."

32. Did the brothers show the same interest in the case that he did?

Ans. "Evidently not."

The answers to my questions, especially if accepted as truthful, dispose rather effectually of my third hypothesis, at least in the form in which I have stated it. The others, of course, fare still worse on the same supposition. But there is a possibility in the story about "foul play" long ago that was worth investigating in the case. The occurrence of the dreams, without the supposition of conscious fraud on the part of McCaffrey, would be a serious difficulty to this theory unless we also assume the possibility that young McCaffrey had heard some time and forgotten the incidents of that rumor, so that they here emerge in his dreams, the web and woof of subliminal action put into this plausible shape. The facts suggesting and favoring such a view are the evident spuriousness of the documents and the "machine-ruled" paper which seems to have come into existence long after the

time indicated by the personalities in the dreams, if the report of the officers in the Bank of England is to be accepted. It will perhaps be impossible ever to settle any question raised by this hypothesis, except by discovering some fact or result more pertinent than the dreams. There are a few difficulties and perhaps inconsistencies that will have to be cleared up. For instance, the first part of this report compiled from contemporary accounts indicate that the old soldier appeared in citizen's clothing in the first dream and in soldier's uniform afterward. In the present account he is reported as having always appeared in the same uniform. Further inquiry is necessary on this point. My question on sleep-walking seems to have been understood as something else, unless the answer "No, as reported" means not to refer to a previous answer, but to the present and past inquiries on this matter by Professor Jewett. But the story of the disappearance of a man in the neighborhood, whether the McCaffreys had any connection with such a real or supposed event or not, has its plausibilities which must affect the case very decidedly. Assuming that such a disappearance was a fact and that the circumstance created or justified the suspicion of foul play, we might even acquit all the McCaffreys, the present and past generation of them, and yet if any incidents of this foul play and possible making away of papers ever came to the ears of young McCaffrey, no matter how young, we could imagine subliminal action reproducing some such story as appears in the dreams. This theory, then, must be the *point de repere* of further investigation. The theory undoubtedly has its difficulties in the peculiarly dramatic character of the dreams, but it will require some very remarkable facts of a nature far more genuine than the documents in the case appear to be to shake its possibilities and pertinence as the matter stands, assuming of course that practical jokes are thrown out of court.

New York, August 30th, 1899.

In reply to a letter sent to Professor Jewett for further information on certain points I received the following:

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,
Aug. 24, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

I am trying to get material for reply to your letters of the 14th and 15th inst. Two or three days will probably be needed for this purpose. It is my intention now to start for Fredonia next Tuesday, to arrive there the evening of the next day. I hope, however, to be able to reply to your recent questions before leaving North Bangor.

It seems to be incontestable that the ground was altogether undug and that the papers were found there as reported. The question to be decided seems, in the first instance, to be merely whether or no the young man had any dreams at all. I will endeavor to make the grounds of the above opinion as manifest as possible when I write at greater length. I could answer some of your questions now, but not all on either one of the sheets; and in order to return the questions with the answers it seems best to defer any detailed reply.

The man who will probably prove to be the most important witness regarding the foul play theory is yet to be interviewed.

Sincerely,
F. N. JEWETT.

In the same mail as the above letter I also received two letters from the persons named in Professor Jewett's letter to me some time ago, as men who could attest McCaffrey's character. They are as follows:

Cook's Corners, Aug. 21, '99.

Mr. J. H. Hyslop.
Dear Sir:

Yours of the 12th at hand. In regard to your inquiries, I have known Michael McCaffrey since he was a boy and know nothing against him as regards truthfulness and morality. As regarding his judgment I should class it above the average.

Respect.—Yours,
EGBERT SOUTHWORTH.

North Bangor, N. Y., Franklin County,
Aug. 21, 1899.

Mr. Hyslop.
Dear Sir:

I received your letter in regard to Michael McCaffrey's dream and character. I saw the 2 stones that he got the paper from. His land joins mine and his general character is very good in the

town. I have known him from a child and his father and all of the family and all right.

Yours truly,

S. G. SOUTHWORTH.

New York, September 1st, 1899.

When transcribing the former letters received from Prof. Jewett a number of questions involving the difficulties of the case occurred to me and I wrote to him for information regarding these points. I give my letters below with Prof. Jewett's replies, and they will explain themselves.

"Short Beach, Conn., August 14th, 1899.

My dear Jewett:

I have been working on your letters since reading them hastily before replying this afternoon, and some further questions and inquiries suggest themselves as important.

1. Have your mother and sister tell as much as they can remember of the results of their sitting with Mrs. Drake, indicating how they met her, what they said to her before the medium told anything, whether the medium asked any questions, etc., everything that will throw light upon the question whether any facts could have been suggested in what she said of the case.

2. Get a similar account from McCaffrey. In each case get as much as can be recalled of what the medium said, and indicate any connection it could have had with what was published.

3. Interrogate, if possible, the other boys who accompanied Michael to the digging, and see what their knowledge is from memory about all the incidents leading up to the digging, their part in it, the nature of the ground, their feelings and convictions about it, etc.

4. Get possession of those pieces of glass for examination by an expert.

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP."

"Please return this with reply."

In returning the sheet Prof. Jewett answered the fourth question on the sheet of the original letter, as follows:

"Those pieces of glass are here, in our keeping. They have been kept here since the summer when they were found."

After writing down the record and studying it more carefully I wrote the following letter the next day for further information. I incorporate with it Prof. Jewett's answers on the returned sheet. More detailed answers are given in letters which follow.

Short Beach, Conn., August 15th, 1899.

My dear Jewett:

I have just finished copying your letters and answers to questions. Studying the whole report as I have it now and your inquiries about whether certain accounts have not already been given to me, I have some further statements to make and questions to ask.

You will get a full copy of my report of the case from Boston when it is made, and the original documents subject to your disposal. Your previous report of the locality where the papers were found did not state details as fully as I wanted them, and I would still like to have your further statements about the appearance of the top of the ground about the place of the digging. Was it grassy and undug as he reports? You described fully enough the inside of the pit. But, as you say, the most important point is to know thoroughly whether there are the slightest reasons for supposing it possible that the ground was recently dug. You see we have to try all sorts of hypotheses and prove or disprove them. The account of your investigation of the house was not written out in full to me in your earlier report. You simply stated your purpose in the visit and your conclusion. As to a copy of list of documents, I have no list given, except allusion to what you send me in your letter describing them when you sent them. Now for questions.

1. Give your own account of the appearance of the top of the ground about the pit dug for the papers.

Ans. "Entirely undisturbed, old, and probably somewhat grass grown."

2. You say in answer to my question about McCaffrey's

sleep-walking, "No, as reported." Do you mean that you inquired at the time of your investigation whether he had any habits or experience in somnambulism, or walking in his sleep?

Ans. "The time of the report referred to was this summer. So far as I can learn from the man, his mother, and others of his family he was never in any sense a somnambulist. I do not remember having made any inquiries upon this point at the time of the finding of the papers."

3. In the original report your account says that the man appeared in "citizen's dress" and afterward in "uniform" and "British" in both cases. In the answer to my questions last sent you to bring out the distinction between these two kinds of dress, your answer to the first question regarding the citizen's clothes was: "Red jacket and cap, the latter thought to be black and of fur. As to other articles of dress, uncertain, but quite sure that he always had a sword." In answer to query about the kind of "uniform" in the later dreams, you say: "See ans. to 1. His uniform was always the same."

Now what was meant in the earlier accounts by the distinction between the "citizen's dress" of the first dream and the "uniform" of the later dreams, and described as British in each case: that is, citizen's and soldier's?

Ans. "So far as McCaffrey now remembers he says that the dress was always the same. Whatever lack of agreement there may be between this report and any earlier one must, it seems, be allowed to remain as a discrepancy."

4. Give me as full an account as possible of your investigation into that rumor about "Foul play." How much trouble did you take to run that story down?

From the psychological point of view this rumor is a very important matter, and might explain the whole affair, even on the acquittal of the McCaffreys from any connection with it.

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP.

P. S. Please to return this with reply for same reasons as before.

The answer to this fourth question was brief and on the sheet of the returned letter, and I was referred to a longer account sent at the same time. But this short answer is as follows:

"As nearly as I can remember, my first knowledge of any foul play was after my return from England, when the matter seemed to be settled and the rumor did not seem to be of much practical importance. At any rate I did not follow it up. For the results of recent inquiries about it see my letter enclosed."

The following is the letter just referred to. It answers this fourth question in detail, and also gives further information regarding the sittings with Mrs. Drake.

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,
Aug. 28, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

Practically all of the evidence which I have been able to get bearing upon the foul play hypothesis in the McCaffrey case has come from two men, both neighbors and acquaintances of McCaffrey, and at present living in this vicinity. Possibly more information bearing upon the hypothesis might be gained somewhere in Canada, where Michael McCaffrey's father lived before he came here. This man Patrick McCaffrey and his brother, Peter, came into this vicinity some few years before our Civil war. Some 15 years ago, more or less, Peter, then quite well along in years, returned to Canada. Patrick remained here until his death, which, as before stated, occurred early in 1888.

The one of the two neighbors referred to whom I first interviewed is a man, David Avery, who has lived where he does now for doubtless 40 years or more, about half a mile from the McCaffrey home, and not far from a mile from our home. He is a man of standing, and there does not appear the slightest reason for questioning any of his statements in this matter. At first he believed that the young man, "Mike," really had the dreams or visions, just as reported. Later upon putting certain things together, his faith was shaken. His chief points were four. (1) Patrick McCaffrey related to this man and his wife, and probably several times, the incident of a man's having been found hung to the limb of a tree on the farm of Patrick McCaffrey's father. This occurred before said Patrick came to this country, and the alleged probable hypothesis was that the man hung himself. He was hung with a new handkerchief which said Patrick had given to this man just before, I think the report is, the very day before

he was found dead. This man frequently stayed more or less at the elder McCaffrey's house, the house of Patrick's father. A fallen tree was lying near the one from which the man was hanging; and as Patrick reported, it was supposed that the man tied the handkerchief about the limb and his neck while he was standing upon the fallen tree, and then suspended himself by jumping off. Patrick said that he was always sorry that this had occurred with a handkerchief which he himself had given to him. I understand that this man was quite well along in years, but not that he was very infirm. (2) The fact that said Patrick hardly ever made any visits to Canada, although he had relatives there. Seemingly he went back only once, and then only for a short time. (3) The fact that Patrick had said something, as reported, about possibly digging up a fortune under some of the pine stumps in the neighborhood. (4) As his last ailment was becoming more severe, and he was suffering much, he had said that he didn't know as he was getting anything more than he deserved. You will remember that Patrick died of cancer in the face, which troubled him much for a long time.

My interview with the other neighbor fully confirmed the report, as such, of the handkerchief and the finding of the man dead. Patrick had spoken of the matter to this man also, and had expressed similar regret that the deed had been done with a handkerchief which he had given. Patrick was speaking of this at his last visit to this neighbor's. He was in extreme pain at the time, which was not many weeks before his death. This neighbor's report of McCaffrey's remark about the fortune under the pine stumps was more definite. It seems that the remark was made more than once, and always upon occasion of discouraging remarks by the neighbor because of the poor quality of the soil where they were living. In such cases McCaffrey had replied, as nearly as could be remembered, "Oh, well; there is a fortune for you and me under these pine stumps sometime."

Of course other features of the case bear more or less upon the hypothesis of foul play, or fraud, or both; but those above mentioned are those which bear most directly upon it, especially as against the McCaffreys. It is but just to call attention to certain other considerations in this connection. The brothers McCaffrey, Patrick and Peter, were both large and strong men, and unusually, almost or quite phenomenally, hard workers. I remember this plainly myself back for more than 30 years. They were both poor, and both had large families of small children. Their work was largely chopping wood in winter and digging ditches in summer, and they did a great deal of the latter, especially for my father. This may have something to do with the fewness and brevity of Patrick's visits to Canada. Point No. 4, above, would not, of itself, probably be considered especially in-

criminating. As to the fortune under some of the pine stumps, I may report what the second neighbor said in this connection, that Patrick was accustomed to make somewhat strange remarks and in consequence this neighbor (a Mr. Ashley) did not know whether he should attach much or little significance to the reference to the fortune.

It has seemed to me that the medium, Mrs. Drake, is not at present an important factor in the case, and yet it may be well to have her sayings in the case recalled as well as possible, and recorded. The first sittings with her occurred in the spring of 1888, and the case, as you know, had been considerably published in the papers the previous summer.

The first sitting was with my mother and sister, and was had at the house of Mr. Wallace Hardy, Malone, N. Y., at the same place where the other two sittings were had. Mrs. Drake had recently come to Malone on a visit, and my mother and sister went to see her in consequence of a recommendation or wish by said Mr. Hardy the previous summer. This man is entirely above suspicion in the matter. They took with them a piece of the bottle tied up in a paper. They reached Mr. Hardy's quite early in the day, and Mrs. Drake, who was somewhat indisposed, had not yet come down stairs from her room. After learning something of their errand, Mr. Drake was at first unwilling to let his wife be called, because of her poor health; but finally consented. He then, however, told Mr. Hardy to call her, or to ask her when she was coming down, (which Mr. Hardy did) saying that if he himself should call her people would say that he had told her something about the case. Mr. Drake simply told Mr. Hardy to speak to her about coming down, not to tell her that any one was there to see her. Mrs. Drake soon came down, and there were then present the persons mentioned, Mr. and Mrs. Drake, my mother and sister and Mr. Hardy, and also Mrs. Hardy. My mother and sister were introduced by name by Mr. Drake, and then the latter handed the package to his wife, asking her if that told her anything. No further information was given and none was asked for; except that after some moments' hesitation she asked what was in the paper. Before asking this, however, she said that she was never so puzzled before, and asked her husband if he had ever seen her so puzzled, to which he replied that he had not. Then she asked her question about what was in the paper, and was told that it was glass. She said that that explained the difficulty, that glass was a non-conductor, and of much less value in such a case than other, or most other substances. Whether or no she was told that the glass was part of a bottle cannot now be affirmed positively, but mother and sister are confidently of the opinion that she was merely told that it was glass. After some further conversation of no additional

significance she went into what has been called a trance, or a fit, a state however quite the opposite to one of inaction. She jumped up in a state of almost or quite terrifying agitation, and exclaimed three times in a hoarse man's voice: "Don't you think that I recognize my bottle!" and then continued, "I buried it long, long years ago." Mr. Drake then asked her if the papers were genuine, and the reply came at once, "*Of course* they are genuine." She then proceeded to give a very accurate description of Michael McCaffrey, the young man, not calling him by name, but giving with marked correctness his personal appearance and character. She said people had laughed at him, and that even the priest had done so, which is said to be true, and that they had said all kinds of things about him, but that he (Mike) was thoroughly sincere in the matter. She also said, as mother says, "When the right time arrives the old soldier will come and take the young man across the water to get his money." She also said that full instructions would be given in writing. x It might be noted in this connection that two or three years ago, at one of the later visions, the old soldier, as reported of course, told Mike about the same thing, viz., that he need not be to any trouble about the matter, that full instructions would be given, and also that the Queen would help him get his money.

The above to x [mark in the letter] is not what Mike has told me, but what we remember here.

After coming from her peculiar condition, Mrs. Drake asked what she had said, and was told more or less about it, seemingly to her surprise. I hope to resume soon.

Sincerely yours,

F. N. JEWETT.

P. S. I have three papers (newspapers) giving accounts of the case, which I expect to send you soon.

The next letter was written the same day, but after the one given above, and supplies further information regarding sittings with this Mrs. Drake, and also other matters, as it indicates.

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,

Aug. 28, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

In my earlier letter to you of this date I gave you an account of what I have learned relative to the foul play hypothesis, and an account of the first of the sittings with Mrs. Drake. I may yet be able to send some further particulars of this sitting, but seemingly nothing that can change the complexion of the event.

The next sitting with her was upon the following day. Michael went with my father. The following account of this sitting was obtained from Michael on the 26th inst.

The persons present were Michael, my father, Mr. and Mrs. Drake, Mr. and Mrs. Wallace Hardy, and later a Mr. James Drake, father of the above Mr. Drake and of Mrs. (Wallace) Hardy.

Mrs. Drake inquired if the young man (Mike) present was not the one who had found the papers, and she was told that he was. Then four or more of the party took seats around a table. The four were father, Mike, Mr. and Mrs. Drake. Early in the sitting, or at the beginning of it, Mrs. Drake took Mike's head in her hands, putting one hand on his forehead and one at the back of his head. This produced a peculiar sensation in the young man, something like electrical. When all of the circle were seated at the table each of them put both hands upon it. Mrs. Drake asked questions, and received the answers by light but audible raps under the table, the character of the answers being determined by the number of raps. There were only three kinds of answers, *Yes*, *no*, and *I don't know*. All communications at this time, upon this case, were given by these raps, one, two, or three in number for each answer. The only question remembered clearly was: "Will the money be got?" The reply to this was, *Yes*. Mrs. Drake claimed that the old soldier was there present.

My sister reports that Mrs. Drake said, later of course, that she recognized Mike the instant she saw him; though it seems quite sure that in any ordinary way she never had seen him.

The next and last sitting of the series was had about the close of the hop-picking season, and so several weeks after the final declarations of the Bank of England concerning the papers. My knowledge, or report of this sitting comes from two sources, chiefly from Michael, whose report will be given first.

The room was the same as that occupied at the two previous sittings. The persons present were Mike, Mr. and Mrs. Drake, Mr. and Mrs. Hardy, and a Mrs. Ladd, also considered somewhat of a medium. All were seated, but not around a table. Early in the conference, or sitting, Mrs. Drake asked Mike if any names or signature had been found on the papers. He replied that so far as he knew no signature had been found. Mrs. Drake suddenly went into a peculiar condition, called trance, in which she shook "all over like a leaf," and probably became paler. Mike thinks also that her eyes were shut. So far as he remembers all the information on the case obtained from Mrs. Drake at this time was in reply to questions put to her by Mrs. Hardy. The questions and answers clearly remembered (were) as follows:

Q. "When will the money be got?"

Ans. "They say it will be got in 1889."

Q. "What will show where the records are?"

Ans. "They are put away in an abbey."

In reply to some question about my having gone to England Mrs. Drake said: "He will have to go back again."

In reply to a question from Mrs. Hardy to Mrs. Ladd the answer came: "The money will surely be got."

The report of this sitting given by the Mr. Hardy mentioned is avowedly meager, and varies in the matter of the trance from that given by Michael. He says that there was no trance, that seemingly Mrs. Drake was in normal condition throughout. He said that Mrs. Drake frequently, or not infrequently, went into a trance, and that he had seen her in such condition. He further states that on this occasion she gave a full description of the old soldier, which was declared by McCaffrey to be strictly correct.

It is *possible* that Mr. Hardy has the description of the soldier at the wrong sitting, and at least equally possible that Mr. McCaffrey has forgotten some of the details; in fact, he says as much. The events of this sitting occurred nearly eleven years ago, and for most of the time since then the case must have seemed past and abandoned, especially to Mr. Hardy.

The following report was obtained on the 22nd inst. from James McCaffrey, brother of Michael. (1). He understands that Michael was alone when he dug the first time. He was very confident of this; and also sure that he (James) was the only one present with Michael when he dug the second time. James said that he was nearly 20 years old at the time, and that his memory on this point was clear. He said however that very soon the whole family were there. The youngest brother, John, who had previously told me that he was present at the digging, was about seven years old at the time, and James said that John must be mistaken in his memory of the time when he reached the place. (2). He understands that Michael had two dreams before the digging (first digging of course); but never knew of his having more than two. (3). The land out around the stump had been plowed, but not up among or between the roots, where the papers were found. (4). He (James) had known for some weeks of Michael's intention to dig near that stump, and was perfectly familiar with the place; there were no indications there at all of recent digging. (5). Stumps had more than once been burned on and around this one; at one time there was a pile of them as large as a small hay-stack.

You notice that this report also shows that there are in the case some discrepancies, or lapses of memory. In addition, Michael's mother told me a few days ago that she did not know that Michael had more than one dream before the digging; while Michael has recently and more than once told me that he must have had more than a dozen of them. Upon this point he is

positive. The dreams were nearly all alike, and as he remembers or believes, he told of them all to the whole family as they occurred. I hope to write further tomorrow, or after reaching Fredonia.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT.

The next letter is on the 29th inst., and continues the case in regard to other matters for which information had been asked.

North Bangor, Franklin Co., N. Y.,

Aug. 29, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

In my note to you of last week I stated that it seemed unquestionable that the papers were found in the ground as reported, and that the ground at that place had not been recently dug or disturbed. I find no two opinions upon this point held by any that are conversant with the facts. Aside from what the McCaffrey family say, there is abundance of direct testimony as to the character of the ground at the place right away after the digging, and this testimony is unvarying. Now if McCaffrey had intended to fabricate the finding of the papers, or if the ground at the immediate place of digging had been in such condition as at all to invalidate the evidential force of the presence of the papers there, why would the young man have made, or have been permitted to make, the appointment with the two reliable men in the immediate neighborhood to come and witness the digging. That such an appointment was made is beyond question, it being a matter of common knowledge in the neighborhood, and from the statement of the man himself, in the case of Joseph Labarge, and in addition to this, of positive statement to me a short time ago by the other man, Egbert Southworth.

Something more may be said about the previous treatment of the stump. Shortly after the finding of the papers Patrick McCaffrey said at our house, upon the testimony of my mother and sister that he had tried many times to burn that stump by piling and burning stumps, etc., around it. A near neighbor of the McCaffreys is inclined to think that he remembers that Patrick did this more or less, but he would not be positive. My sister, however, is positive that at the time the stump was thoroughly charred, "charred all over." She was among the earliest to visit the place after the digging.

The McCaffrey house is and was about 20 feet square; it was called 20 feet square without qualification, and is of less size than this on the inside. The chamber is reached by one flight of stairs,

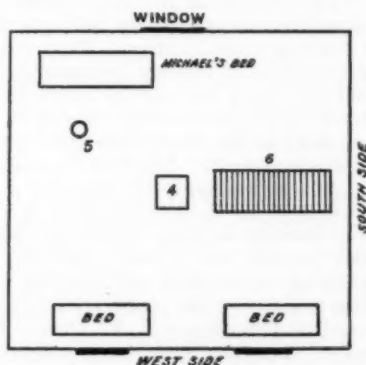
and was all one room, though there may have been a curtain a few feet high by the side of one of the beds. There were three beds in the chamber. About half a dozen of the children, more or less, slept there regularly, more likely to be seven than five. The youngest was about seven years old, and their ages ranged from this to near twenty years or more. A man standing in the light, before any one of the beds, would have been plainly visible from one of the others, and in my opinion, visible from both of the others. The following is a rough ground plan of the chamber, the windows being of common size for such a house and at a usual distance from the floor.

1, 2, and 3 are windows.

4 is the chimney.

5 is the position of the old soldier.

6 is the stairway.



I give further particulars told me by Michael just recently. Perhaps they are not all in the material that has been sent you. The appearances were all about twelve or one o'clock at night. There was always a moderate brightness in the room except at the last two or three times when the illumination was much greater. The light or illumination was always of a straw yellow color. The source of the light was not seen. There is no remembrance of the presence of shadows. There was no odor and no noise, except, of course, the voice of the person speaking to him. There was no knowledge of what woke him, and so far as he remembers he always slept more or less the rest of the night. The termination of each vision was sudden, "just like the blowing out of a light," but no sound was heard. The (young) man has been very ready to give me seemingly all possible assistance in getting knowledge of the case. He has walked up here several times, a distance of about two miles, in order to give me more extended accounts for the better answering of all questions. I had told him that such were being asked. He also set about

getting copies of papers containing accounts of the affair published at the time. He himself had not kept any. He has brought me three, all of July, 1887, *The Malone Palladium*, *The Malone Farmer*, and the *Utica Saturday Globe*. In this mail I send you under separate covers, the leaves of these papers containing the accounts (see above page). This part in each case is enough for the identification of the paper and the issue. The rest of each paper is preserved. Michael says that an early statement in the *Palladium* account is a mistake. You will notice it at once,—about his dreaming that he dug,—and it is my own opinion also that this was a reporter's error at the time.

The second of the two neighbors quoted upon the foul play hypothesis says that he believes that Michael has been sincere throughout this matter. He reports that McCaffrey mentioned the dreams or visions hesitatingly and confidentially to himself and another a few weeks before he dug, and that McCaffrey was much undecided whether to dig at all, for fear that the devil was involved in the case. The other one of the three encouraged him to dig and said: "Devil or no devil, I would dig."

McCaffrey says that the old soldier was a decidedly smaller man than his father, and that his face, which he saw distinctly, was smooth shaven. His father had a moustache and full beard, and besides the extreme disfigurement of the cancer. Several days ago McCaffrey told me that the soldier looked (in the face) like a man by the name of Brown, now dead, who at the time lived in Brushton (N. Y.), five miles or so from the McCaffrey home, and sometimes drove a hearse. He had never had dealings with this man, and was never unusually, or at all interested in him, and thinks that he had never spoken to him.

A few days later the second neighbor above mentioned told me that at one of the conversations with him before the digging Michael told him that the soldier looked just like a man in Brushton by the name of Brown. A little later another neighbor gave me the same report of resemblance as made by McCaffrey a short time after the digging.

Sincerely yours,

F. N. JEWETT.

It will be clear from the above letters that the medium must be absolutely thrown out of court. I saw the probability, I might even say the certainty, of this at the outset. But I required positive facts to substantiate this probability. The manner of the sittings, the preliminary statements of the sitters, the questions put by both sitters and the medium, and the answers gotten show that there is no reason to con-

sider her part in the case of any value, except to explain the possible source of one of Michael's dreams by suggestion from what she told him. But the contents of her statements to him are all easily explainable by her supposed knowledge of the case from the published accounts in the newspapers some time before the sittings, and by her questions in connection with this fact. The question about what was in the paper, that as to who Michael was, and that whether there was any signature on the papers, and taken with the fact that no name was given for the soldier in her sittings, are almost indubitable proof that her whole contribution to the case was pure trickery, whether we choose to call it conscious or unconscious. Consequently the case reduces itself to the two questions regarding foul play and the nature of the dreams, and possibly the dreams may be included in this one hypothesis of crookedness in the early history of the case.

Now it is not easy as yet to form any stable theory about the affair. • There are a great many various possibilities within the supposition of "foul play" of some kind. But whether the case be spurious or genuine it is very important to have rescued from oblivion the rumor and connected incidents about the handkerchief and the man found dead on the McCaffrey place in Canada. Without irreproachable evidence in detail refuting the grounds for the possibility of this story there is not the slightest hope that the case can be rescued from fatal suspicions. But the story shows difficulties in any theory about it, unless further investigations clear up some or all of them. I may state, however, the alternative possibilities in the case on the basis of the story about "foul play."

1. Murder, theft, and concealment of them by emigration and burial of the documents by the elder McCaffrey, and later conspiracy with him by the son to conceal the facts and yet secure the property.
2. Suicide of the man in the case, theft by the elder McCaffrey and subsequent actions as in the first theory.
3. The entire innocence of the whole McCaffrey family in so far as either murder and theft are concerned, but the

finding of the man's papers in the house where he is reported to have staid, and their concealment to prevent compromising suspicions, and subsequent conspiracy to secure the proceeds of the papers.

4. The same suppositions as the *third* with the addition that the papers had been actually left with the McCaffreys, and with the exception that Michael's dreams were genuine and representing supernormal information regarding the whereabouts of the papers.
5. The same suppositions as the *fourth* with the exception that the *first* dream is the reproduction of some fact obtained in childhood, but forgotten, and later dreams the result of the interest stimulated by the first one.

It is possible to state another hypothesis, namely, that the story about the man found dead is wholly false and the dreams perfectly genuine, but I imagine that this can hardly be entertained seriously in the light of the specific and pertinent facts told by the two neighbors regarding what they heard from the mouth of the father himself. It is more likely that there is some meaning in those incidents, and hence it must be assumed in the case. This being the fact the key to any further interest in the matter must be the question regarding the genuineness of the dreams and the honesty of Michael McCaffrey himself. The case in his favor seems to be a strong one. The discrepancies in his story are easily accounted for by errors of memory when we take the consistent conduct which he has shown in probing the incidents. The contemporary accounts to both the newspapers and Professor Jewett show also the possibility that the statements of the older brother who was said to have witnessed the first digging are also an instance of obliviscence, unless we assume fraud at the outset on the part of Michael. If the original reports at the time of the event did not connect the two brothers with the digging there would be less reason to suspect an error of memory on the part of James McCaffrey, which is further confirmed by the recollection of the much younger son, though we cannot

attach conclusive weight to this. But it appears at present that these are the only discrepancies in the narrative along with that about the number of dreams, while all other features of the story hold together and make it doubtful whether we should lay stress upon these slight errors. Did we have to reckon with illusions of memory, which must be reckoned with as imperatively on the side of a natural explanation as on that of the supernormal, we could well feel justified in putting an end to any serious treatment of the phenomena. But the possibility of them in any case, taken in connection with the singular coherence and plausibility of the events in the whole case requires us to secure more cogent evidence before asserting fraud or deception of any kind with positive assurance. Consequently the problem becomes a very complicated one. But it would be a very singular outcome to find the evidence in favor of a suspicious history for the documents and of genuinely coincidental dreams, not necessarily supernormal or significant. But assuming the general truth of the rumor about the source of the documents, whether they were obtained by fair or foul means, we could suppose either that Michael had the first dream suggested by an unconscious recollection in sleep of something witnessed or overheard in childhood and forgotten, and that the other dreams were worked out by subconscious reasoning and stimulated interest in the case, or that he had a genuinely supernormal dream in the first case, whether we choose to regard it as telepathic or spiritistic in its origin, and that later dreams were the general repetition of the first with subliminal variations. These are complicated suppositions, but are well worth putting forward as working hypotheses in the attempt to measure the facts and reports.

I have said that some of the statements of the medium might explain by suggestion the occurrence of one of his dreams. I alluded to the last reported dream of getting the money in 1900 and seeing Professor Jewett and his father on the steamer Umbria. It is extremely doubtful whether any such interpretation should be put upon the connection between the medium's statements and Michael's dream, but the thought of its possibility, however extravagant the supposi-

tion, may be mentioned for the sake of the critical. I do not deny the possibility of this view, but there is not adequate evidence in the case for asserting it as the most likely theory of its origin. It ought to take a different shape if that were the case. Hence the whole case obtains any further interest it may possess from the question of the origin of the dreams or the report of them.

New York, September 18th, 1898.

The negative outcome of the inquiries at the Bank of England in 1888, and the persistence of the dreams, taken with the fact that the former letters from that institution were not signed by the officer to whom the correspondence was addressed, induced me to try a slightly different application for information of a slightly different kind that would either put an end to all suppositions regarding the possibility of funds in that institution with the lineage claimed for them in the dreams, or confirm the possibility of them in a form different from the exact statements in the visions. Hence I wrote to Mr. F. W. H. Myers, asking him to inquire at the Bank of England to know whether George III ever made any deposits in that institution, and if so what the amounts were. I knew that if such deposits had existed I could obtain a clue in that fact to the possible truth or falsehood of the incidents in McCaffrey's experiences. I also asked Mr. Myers not to hint that the information was desired in America, as I wanted no suspicion that I was investigating the case that had already been pronounced upon by the authorities of the Bank, though in a somewhat different form. The following is the reply which Mr. Myers received from the Bank and forwarded to me. Fortunately this time it is signed by the officer, who is a personal acquaintance of Mr. Myers. The following is the letter, and is marked private in the left hand upper corner.

Private.

Bank of England,
1st September, 1899.

Dear Myers:

I have caused a search to be made here in regard to your inquiry as to whether George III ever made deposits of money, and a very large number of dusty and time-worn ledgers have

been examined, with the result that we cannot find any trace of money having been so deposited.

You do not raise the question of stock inscribed in the bank books, so I have made no search in that direction; but I may say that an inquiry would be almost impossible unless one knew the title of the stock and the precise name or names in which the holding stood in the bank books.

Yours very faithfully,

KENNETH GRAHAME.

Many thanks for all your good wishes. Hope you're having a pleasant holiday. K. G.
F. W. H. Myers, Esq.

It is clear that if we are to take the dreams seriously we must look in the direction of Bank Stock for which the papers dug up by McCaffrey are mere receipts or vouchers, though it certainly strains their superficial meaning to put any such interpretation upon them, especially if the Bank officer's earlier report about the introduction of the blue lined paper in this century be accepted, with the implication that it was at least twenty-five, and possibly fifty years after the date of the alleged certificates. There remains to investigate any possible clues existing in the above letter's reference to Bank stock. But the result as it stands is so much negative testimony to the hypothesis which I have framed in outline, namely, that, assuming the suspicious origin of the papers and the innocence of Michael McCaffrey in the whole case, we may suppose that his first dream represents the resurgence into his dream life of an old and wholly forgotten incident overheard by him as a young child, and repeated with the inferences and experiences occurring after the discovery of the papers, so that we have a most interesting case of the dramatic play of personality between the subliminal and supraliminal of the dreamer. Of course this is all an *a priori* speculation on my part, but I would only contend that it has at least its possibilities until better evidence is forthcoming for a more serious hypothesis than anything we have yet ascertained.

New York, September 24th, 1898.

The following letters regarding this case were received soon after written but not copied until the present date.

They were written in response to inquiries made to ascertain more distinctly the possibilities of the foul play theory. I am to have a more complete answer to those inquiries as soon as it can be obtained. But the chief matter of present interest is the reply to one of the questions directed to ascertain whether the father of Michael McCaffrey had ever made the remark about money being gotten under these stumps before the dreams occurred and before the digging. I had also asked what had been said to Mr. Drake regarding the purpose of the visitors before Mrs. Drake came down stairs at least its possibilities until better evidence is forthcoming below. The questions which called forth this and the other letters will be included in the later report.

Fredonia, N. Y., Sept. 6, 1898.

My dear Hyslop:

I can reply partially now to your last list of questions, and write home for further information, retaining the questions meanwhile.

1. Presumably, and I think really, nothing was said to Mrs. Drake about the object of the visit before she came down stairs. In fact, I think she did not know that any one was there to see her. It was to avoid all suspicion of anything of the kind that Mr. Drake had Mr. Hardy speak to her to learn when she was coming down. Said Mr. Drake, "If I should call her, people would say that I had told her something." Upon looking at this question again it occurs to me that you may mean "What was said to Mr. Drake, etc." To this I can not answer positively, but it is my impression that something had been said to him about it.

2. Patrick McCaffrey did make those remarks about the "fortune under those pine stumps for you and me, etc.," before the papers were found. In this fact, supposedly, lay the significance of the remarks. He was likely, however, as I wrote before, to make somewhat strange remarks upon any subject.

3. Yes, if Mrs. McCaffrey would give the story. If the foul play theory, however, is in any of its phases true, and if she knows the facts which gave rise to it, whether she knows of the theory or not, she would probably at once notice the bearing of the questions and be reticent. It might be well, however, to make the attempt.

4. Peter McCaffrey is said to be living in Canada, and I am inclined to think, near the old locality. Probably it will not be difficult for me to get his address.

5. Very likely I can find from what place in Canada the McCaffreys came.

6 and 7. Cannot speak definitely upon these now. I have questioned about the attitude of the father, but never with any definite results, so far as I can remember. I can try again.

8. I never talked to the father much about the matter. He seemed to think that the money would come; this was two or three days after the papers had been found.

9. Perhaps Mrs. McCaffrey might be questioned about the hanging, etc., but I am not yet quite decided how to go about it. I would like to have some acquaintance do it in a casual way. Perhaps she would tell all she knows about it if I should ask her directly, and perhaps not.

10. She reported her attitude concerning the "dreams" as one of wonderment and ignorance. As she told me this summer, she simply did not know what to make of them.

11. I understand that no money was paid to Mrs. Drake at any of these sittings, or for them.

12. I cannot speak very definitely about her standing in the community. Some did not believe in her, naturally, and I believe were quite pronounced in their opinion. She did not reside at Malone. I have understood that in spiritualistic circles she was considered a *very* good medium. It was reported, I think by Mrs. Drake herself, that her father used to whip her cruelly for her mediumistic acts when she was a child; and Mrs. Hardy said that she had seen the scars herself.

13. I can not tell when the man was found hung on the McCaffrey place, though it must have been in the fifties, if not earlier; more *probably*, I should think, in the fifties.

At the first sitting Mrs. Drake used some language that I have not reported because it did not seem worth while,—something about "the brave" helping the boy get his money. Some expressions of this kind were used that I think would not recommend her to you, unless the psychology of the occasion were something more than has yet occurred to me.

I will endeavor to answer your last questions more definitely as soon as practicable.

Sincerely yours,

F. N. JEWETT.

P. S.—Michael was not so young at the time of the dreams as I had supposed; he is now in the neighborhood of forty years; was probably not far from 27 years old then. The matter of exact age has not seemed to me to be very important.

F. N. J.

Fredonia, N. Y., Sept. 7, 1899.

My Dear Hyslop:

Since writing the enclosed of last evening (above letter) your note of the 5th inst. has reached me, relative to the advisability of putting some of the questions into the hands of Mr. Gibson, of North Bangor.

Mr. Gibson is an old man, and hard of hearing, and somewhat infirm, not a typical newspaper correspondent, seemingly well meaning, and so far as I know, quite trustworthy. I am not much acquainted with him, in fact I do not remember ever having met him until this summer. He came down to see me about this case so that he might reply to a letter to him from the Palladium concerning it. This letter was caused by your inquiry of that paper.

Some of the questions might be sent to him, but I would hesitate at present before sending him all of them. This may be advisable ultimately, but two reasons occur to me for not doing it just now, if at all. First, it seems possible that the results might be reached better through my sister and mother, with assistance of persons thereabouts. Secondly, to send these questions to Mr. Gibson would be by so much to spread the foul play theory. I myself have been careful not to do this, even to the point of not increasing one informant's knowledge of the case by telling him facts gained from another.

In addition, the fact stated that Mr. Gibson cannot hear well is somewhat against him. So it would seem to me to be well to wait a little and see what we can get through other channels.

Information about the circumstances of the McCaffrey immigration into this country I would like to get from the place they came from.

Very truly yours,

F. N. JEWETT.

The following letter gives some farther and original information regarding the sittings with Mrs. Drake. It explains itself.

Fredonia, N. Y., Sept. 8, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

The enclosed sheet will explain itself. It came to me from my mother to-day, in whose keeping it has been since the time it was written. It is my impression that it was written in the very hour of the sitting. If I learn differently I will inform you.

I hope to be able to send you further reply to your last questions in a week or two. Of course it looks as if we would be obliged to trust some of this case to other persons ultimately if its prosecution is continued. If you are at all differently im-

pressed from myself regarding the present employment of Mr. Gibson of North Bangor, please inform me.

Sincerely,
F. N. JEWETT.

The following is a copy of the notes taken at the sitting with Mrs. Drake. On the back of the paper which purports to be the original is the following note by Professor Jewett.

"Notes taken at the time by Mrs. Wallace Hardy of what was said by Mrs. Drake at the sitting with my mother and sister in the spring of 1888. As reported to me Mrs. Drake spoke rapidly, and these notes do not contain all that she said.

Fredonia, N. Y., Sept. 8, 1899.

Franklin N. Jewett,

"I go back a great way. A great loss—a man and a woman. I go down in the ground. I see sand. Some one is so far away trying to draw near. Something buried—I get a tragedy. Glass is a non-conductor and throws me off.

They are having some trouble, but it is all right. Belongs across the water. The British soldier will show the brave who found it and will take him to get the money. The whole directions will be written out to find it. It has been written once but was not very definite. Some acid will bring it out. The old brave was killed and they buried him. The boy will get his money. The boy is a medium."

New York, September 28th, 1899.

I can now report exactly the questions which I sent to Professor Jewett and to which allusion was made above with the answers given in the letter of September 6th. I first give the letter returning the questions and explaining the matter.

Fredonia, N. Y., September 21st, 1899."

"My dear Hyslop:

"Yours of the fifteenth inst. came promptly. Enclosed find your last set of questions, with answers more or less complete. You will remember that a week or two ago I wrote you in partial reply to them, by number. The questions have been meanwhile in my keeping.

I may be able to learn something more from home about the circumstances, or causes, that led the McCaffreys to come into this country. Mrs. McCaffrey, as reported by herself, was mar-

ried at Malone, N. Y., and was or had been living at the time in the town of Fort Covington, same county, Franklin.

"Mrs. McCaffrey's story of the man found hung seems as if it might be a more difficult thing to reach. If Michael's connection with the case is honest, perhaps he is the best person through whom to obtain her version of the matter. I believe I will at least begin to feel my way in this direction. It would be interesting to hear from some of the old residents of Lochiel about the incident.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT."

The following are the questions answered in the letter of September 6th. I copy them with their answers in the usual form. These answers as will be remarked are shorter than the previous ones, but of the same import.

1. What was said to Mrs. Drake at the first sitting before Mrs. Drake came down stairs explaining the object of the visit.

Ans. "Something; do not know how much."

2. Did Patrick McCaffrey ever say before the papers were found that "a fortune would be found sometime among those pine stumps"?

Ans. "Yes."

3. Could any one be trusted to get Mrs. McCaffrey's story of the family's emigration into this country?

Ans. "Yes, probably, with care. Will write further."

4. Does any one know whether Peter McCaffrey is living or not, and where?

Ans. "P. O., Brodie, Slengary County, Ontario, Canada."

5. Can you find the place, town and county, from which the McCaffreys came in Canada?

Ans. "From Town (of) Lochiel, Slengary County, Ontario, Canada."

6. Can any one say what Michael's father said or did on the discovery of the papers?

Ans. "He said to take them to Mr. Jewett's, that he was at home then and could tell what to do with them. The Mr. J. referred to was myself. (This comes from Michael through my sister.) Michael asked his father what to do

with the papers, they were so old and worn; and the father replied as above."

7. Did the father join in the ridicule of the son for his dreams, or was he reticent about them?

Ans. "Have not learned that he joined in the ridicule."

8. Did you ever talk to the father about the case, and what are or were your impressions about him in the matter?

Ans. "As I remember, he seemed to share in the general wonderment, and expected that the money would be obtained on the papers."

9. Is there any way to interrogate Mrs. McCaffrey regarding the story of the man found hung on their place in Canada, and regarding the handkerchief incident?

Ans. "I have not determined upon any definite plan yet. I would not want her to see any connection between the questions and investigation of the dreams."

10. What do you know personally about her attitude regarding the dreams, and whether there were indications of simulation on her part in incidents of the dreams and discovery of the papers?

Ans. "No indication of simulation has come to my notice, or knowledge."

11. Did you have to pay Mrs. Drake any money for her work?

Ans. "No, I understand not."

12. What was her general standing in the community, socially, morally, and financially?

Ans. "Am not positive; but some evidently had no faith in her. Hard or disparaging things were said of her; but I cannot give details."

13. Can any one now say *when*, or about when, the man was found hung on the McCaffrey place in Canada?

Ans. "Probably before 1858."

"Compare my letter of a week or ten days ago."

I saw by the reply to the second question that I had not put it in the right manner, and I wrote the following for further information.

Columbia University, New York, Sept. 25th, 1899.

My dear Jewett:

I see by your return of my questions that I did not ask one of them rightly. I should have asked whether Patrick McCaffrey had said that about the fortune among the pine stumps before any dream had occurred. I said "before the papers were found." My object you will see is to find whether he said it from the stimulus of the dreams or foreknowledge of the presence of the papers. Hence I should have put my question differently. I put it therefore here, and repeat it. Did he say this about the fortune before the dream occurred?

Yours as ever,

J. H. HYSLOP.

Prof. Jewett replies on the same sheet as follows, giving date of reply at the end.

"Yes, I understand that he said it more than once, and years, one or more before the first dream. This was precisely one of the circumstances which caused Mr. Avery, for instance, to question the reality of the dreams. The other neighbor, Mr. Ashley, to whom Patrick made the remarks in question, believes, as I wrote you, that Michael has been sincere in the whole matter; and he would not consider himself shut up to the alternative which you have written above in accounting for the remarks. I returned your recent letter with replies this a. m.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT.

9-26-'99."

The explanation to which the close of this letter alludes and which I had ventured upon was the same that I have embodied in this report above. I do not require to repeat it here. It is only fair to say, however, that the phrase about the fortune being found sometime among those pine stumps does not necessarily imply any previous knowledge of the paper afterward found under that particular stump. It is a mode of expression rather common with men who defend any reproachful insinuations about their land or property, when joked about it. But in spite of this lenient view or possibility, the alternative of complicity in the matter is so possible that it must receive the preference until reliable evidence can replace it by a better view. Hence I incline too

strongly to that hypothesis to emphasize any apologies for another theory.

New York, December 4th, 1899.

I wrote to Professor Jewett the last of October to get the names and addresses of the proper parties in Canada to run down the story of the man found hung on the McCaffrey place, and received the following reply with a scheme of the place where the events took place and names of the parties of whom to inquire. Both the representation of the farms and the names were furnished by Michael McCaffrey himself through his mother. I quote Professor Jewett's letter and then Michael's note.

Fredonia, N. Y., Nov. 3, 1899.

My dear Hyslop:

The enclosed letter to me and map will need no special explanation. An inferior map had been made out, and was also sent to me. That one I retain. This information comes in response to inquiries sent home recently in accordance with your request of the 23rd ult.

Sincerely,

F. N. JEWETT.

Michael's note is as follows with map appended:

Cook's Corners, N. Y., Nov. 2nd, 1899.

Mr. Jewett:

Ma says the Farm was about all cleared up when she left there. I had John draw another map Plainer than the one I drew to your House. But I send them Both to you. I will give you the names of 2 or 3 men that was living in my father's time with their P. O. adress.

Mr. Alexander Cameron; Mr. Duncan D. McMillan; Mr. Owen Heath; Mr. John McMillan; all Brodie, Ontario, Canada, Glengary County.

The Place is Lochiel Ontario, Glengary County & it is Divided off in what is called the 14th concession of Lochiel. It is about 25 miles, I should say, north east of Lancaster.

Well I will close for now & will Be glad to answer all Questions as far as I am able to yourself & Prof ——— [Hyslop] I forget his name.

yours Respfully,

MICHAEL McCAFFREY.

The map is as follows:

| | | |
|----------------------|---|--|
| North and South Road | | |
| | 50 Acres John McCaffrey Barn House X X | 50 Acres James McCaffrey House X Old Homestead |
| | East and | West road |
| | 50 Acres Wood Lot owned by John McCaffrey | 50 Acres Land owned by John McMillan X Log House |

I wrote to all four persons named in Michael's letter and received a reply from two of them. I give the letters below.

1899
Township Lochiel
Brodie P. O. ont.

Prof. James H. Hyslop

yours of the 13th inst is to hand and would Say in reply to your inquire you better write to John McCaffrey or Miss mareyan Bryan who can give you more information than I can as I was quite young at the time. If my father was living likely he could tell all about him. would you kindly let me know what is the information required for and oblige

yours truly,
ALEX. D. CAMERON.

address all to Brodie, ont. •

Mr. D. H. B. McMillan's reply is as follows:

Brodie, Nov. 16th, 1899.

Mr. James H. Hyslop.

Dear Sir:

in Answer to your letter I received yesterday I beg to say that I was acquainted with one Tom Higgy. he used to stay at John McCaffrey few days now and then about 56 years ago. about 55 years ago one spring sometime in the beginning of may he was 1 or 2 weeks at McCaffrey and he used to go to my bush in the morning, come home in the evening and at last he stopped coming home to McCaffrey. so in a week's time McCaffrey sent a word to his Brother, peter higgys, 10 miles away to the north. he sent a word to another place 8 miles west. word soon came Back from that place he was not there. so his Brother peter Higgy came over to see about him and the neighbors gathered and search was made & was made and soon found him hanging to a tree with a silk handkerchief within 2 acres of the clearance. I understand that they had crowner over him. it seems that he bought a farm about 8 miles south east from here. he made one payment on the place. him and his first neighbors did not pull very well. a some way his house took fire and he got lonesome and low in spirit after that. now I cannot give you the exact year but I put up my house in the year 47 & I put up by barn in 48 and I got married the year 49 and I am 50 years on my farm and I would say it happened 4 or 5 years before I got married. I was not living on the place at the time it happened on my farm. I was not present when they got him but my father was passing on horse back just at the time they got him. no more at present. I would like to know the reason [for] this search.

D. H. B. McMILLAN.

My inquiry asked only to know whether any man had hung himself or was found hung on the McCaffrey farm somewhere about 1858, before or after. I told nothing of my story or its meaning or even gave the slightest hint of my object. The answers speak for themselves. Further inquiries have not been answered as yet.

It appears then that a man was found hung much as reported by Michael's father and the incident of the handkerchief is confirmed, though there are no data for determining anything in regard to the suspicion of foul play. The facts seem to discredit both the suspicion of foul play in the man's death and the suspicion that his pockets had been rifled of their contents after his death, though it is still not impossible

to suppose this. Mr. McMillan's story if the true account of the events leading up to the discovery of the man rather favors suicide by a despondent man and throws doubt upon the supposition that he had any such prospects as are implied in the papers dug up by Michael, though again there is no direct evidence against this possibility. But it seems too tenuous to build a theory upon until more is known regarding the case.

New York, December 17th, 1899.

After the above letter from Mr. McMillan I wrote to him again to know if this Tom. Higgy had been a British or Canadian soldier, and whether there had been any rumors of foul play in connection with the hanging or finding of the body. The following is his reply:

Brodie, Dec. 6th, 1899.

Mr. J. H. Hyslop.

Dear Sir:

in Answer to your letter Dated 20 November was my reason for not Answering yours sooner I was away few days and now I am at home your first question if he that is tom higgy was a Soldier I say no. I dont suppose any army would take him for he was not all there for I was inquiring of some of the neighbors that was more acquainted with him than I was and they all say that they never hear word about it being a soldier and they say no contry would take him to be a soldier

the next question about the coroners inquest on the tom higgy body. Between the coroner and forman & the jury they all Agreed upon the case that he hanged himself his remains did not show any foul play as I said before about his house taking fire he was burning stumps near his house a spark went to the house and it burned down he was not in a hurry to put it up again the neighbors (?) coax (coks?) him to put it up the house again he did I dont now how long after that it took fire again and then he left the place for good and started to go to his Brother and he came to McCaffrys place he staid there for two weeks and was going to the bush every day after Breakfast and came back in the evening till at last he stop coming home to McCaffery.

Dear sir I am no scholar and I cant put a (ll) the writing as it should be but perhaps it will do after all I done my best

I was thinking that you must be some relation to him no more to say but I remains yours truly

D. H. B. McMILLAN.

New York, March 22nd, 1900.

In order to obtain more satisfactory evidence on the matter I contrived through a friend in Toronto to have myself put into communication with a barrister there who could investigate the question on the spot. He secured finally a Mr. Gordon, of Cornwall, who went out to the region in which Mr. Higgey had committed suicide and ascertained from persons still living all that could be obtained regarding the facts. I incorporate below the letter and questions with which I provided him the means of satisfying my curiosity in the case.

Columbia University, New York,

Dec. 4th, 1899.

My Dear Sir:—The following are the questions that I wish answered in regard to the suicide or hanging of Thomas Higgy near Brodie, between 1840 and 1850:

1. Who owned the place at the time of the hanging?
2. Who owns it now?
3. Was this Thomas Higgy a soldier in the British or Canadian army?
4. If he was a soldier where can I find an official record of the fact?
5. Was there any suspicion at the time of any foul play in the man's death?
6. What was the coroner's verdict and if possible the facts that served as the basis of it?
7. Who found the body in the search for it after ascertaining that the man was missing?
8. Did any suspicions rest on a McCaffrey in connection with the affair?
9. Did the ownership of the handkerchief with which he was hung figure in the case?

In answering these questions you should seek out Mr. John McCaffrey, Mr. D. H. B. McMillan, the latter especially, and Miss Mary Ann Bryan, all of Brodie, Clengarry County, Ontario. You will of course have to examine Mr. McCaffrey with the utmost skill and adroitness, and possibly Mr. Cameron will suspect you at first, as he asked me what

my object was in making my inquiry, and I told him it was merely in the study of a dream that had occurred in this state, asking him however, if he had ever heard of any rumors about foul play. No answer came to this. But you may probably find other persons in the locality who know something about the case. Mr. McMillan can certainly tell you who these may be. But I shall be most gratified to have the coroner's verdict.

Very truly,

J. H. HYSLOP.

Toronto, March 7th, 1900.

Prof. James H. Hyslop,
Columbia University,
New York.

My dear Professor:—I am just in receipt of a report on the Brodie case.

I am indeed very sorry that the matter has been so long delayed, but I was so busy this season that it was difficult for me to get away the necessary time to give it my personal attention. I think Mr. Gordon has gone into the matter pretty fully. He writes me from Cornwall as follows:—"I looked into the Brodie matter with the following results. I will answer the questions as numbered, and you can fill them in on the type-written sheet.

"No. 1—D. H. B. McMillan owned farm."

"No. 2—D. H. B. McMillan now owns it."

"No. 3—No."

"No. 4—

"No. 5—McMillan, Mary and Ann Ryan say no. A. D. J. McCoy, who is married to a niece of the victim, says Yes."

"No. 6—Will write you about this question."

"No. 7—One McCaffrey and James Heatt."

"No. 8—McMillan and Ryan say, No."

"No. 9—Couldn't tell."

Re coroner's verdict. I called today and spent the forenoon with the clerk of the peace, who is Mr. Dingwall. All papers before he assumed office were dumped in one pile all

mixed together, so that all papers, say from about 1770 or 1880 up to the time he assumed office—some 27 years ago—were all mixed up together. His own work he can lay his hands on at any time. So the only way to find out would be to go through all these papers, and he said it would take at least one month, and even then he said you would not be sure of getting it, as you would have to look up the statutes and find out to whom the care of such papers were entrusted at the time, and follow the matter up, as the law kept changing in such cases, and possibly at the time of confederation all such papers may have been required to be sent to Toronto. He don't know, but he said possibly if you asked the clerk of the peace there, he could tell you, as he may be familiar with such matters, or that you could get all the statutes there for 150 years back. You may have them yourself. He was willing to do anything he could to look the matter up. At any time I could yet any information that these people have to give, if needed.

I first called on McMillan, then I called on the Ryan women, two old maids. It is a sister of Mary and Ann Ryan that is married to this McCaffrey, living down there now, so there was no use going to McCaffrey for information after I saw the Ryans. McMillan told me he was hanged with a silk H. H. D., and Ryans said it was a big cotton one, for McCaffrey saw him buy the H. H. D. One of these Ryan women helped to sew the sheets Higgy was buried in. This Thomas Higgy used to have a piece of land down there. He built on it. McMillan says he got burned out twice, and after he got burned out the second time, he used to stay with McCaffrey a good deal, and between there and his brother's, a little distance away. He never was very sound in mind, but after the second fire, he got worse. He used to walk between these two places a good deal. So one day he went off from McCaffrey's and they supposed he had gone to his brother's and paid no attention to him, till one day McCaffrey called at Tom's brother's and he asked how Tom was. His brother said, I don't know, I have not seen him for some time. Isn't he here? (said McCaffrey). No, said the brother. They got up a search party and in about half an

hour they found him hanging to a limb of the tree. Not far from where McMillan's house now stands, lot 11 in the Fifth Concession of Lochiel. He was missing about nine days. McMillan was not living on the farm at the time, though he owned it. But he did not think there was any foul play, and could not tell anything about the coroner's verdict. He told me to see Mary and Ann Ryan. So I will give you their story. Mary and Ann Ryan, both talking now in good old Irish style, told me about the same as McMillan, with these exceptions.

They say Higgy was burned out three times. First time by a spark from a fallow. The second and third time he was set on fire. They say the third time he must have been robbed, as the parties who first arrived got there in time to see that everything was taken out of the house. In reference to the hanging, they say there were indications that he must have been figuring for some time, as the log he walked up on to catch the limb on which he was hanged, showed signs of a good deal of walking on, as the moss was knocked off the log a good deal and tramped on a good deal too.

The fact that everything was taken out of the house before the last fire, so much tramping on the log where he was hanged, McCaffrey saying he saw him buying the handkerchief and that they found him so easy, and McCaffrey being the first to find him might lead to the theory of foul play, as well as the fact that he used to stay mostly at McCaggrey's and he was away nine days at this time without looking after him.

To find out if he was a soldier, I took a drive to see another man who came from the same place as Higgy in Ireland. His name was Henry Cain, 92 years of age. He did not think he was a soldier at any time. In fact he was sure.

I again called on D. J. McCoy, who is married to a niece of Tom Higgy, his brother's child. He said foul play was suspected, but could give no particulars. He being a soldier, McCoy said he never was. But there was a Higgy left Vankleek Hill and enlisted in the American Army under General Grant and was shot and killed. About two years ago two men called at McCoy's and asked Mrs. McCoy what

she would take for her share in her uncle's estate. She said she didn't know anything about it, but she would see Mr. McCoy about it when he came home. McCoy don't know whether he ever had anything or not. Higgy was no relation to McCaffrey that I could find out.

I think I have given you all the information I could get now, but the coroner's verdict. The coroner at the time was Owen Quigley. He was assessor, collector, and coroner. The inquest was conducted on the ground where the hanging took place. There was no doctor present. As soon as the trial was over, they rolled him in a sheet and put him in a coffin made right on the spot. This was as near as I could find out in the year 1845, last of April. McMillan said it was about four or five years before he moved on to the farm, and he is now fifty years on the farm. I think this is all the information I can give you."

If there are any other points you would want, you might let me know, and I may be able to get them from Mr. Gordon, as he has gone into the matter pretty fairly.

I come from Glengarry myself, but am not personally acquainted very much in this district. I generally go there in the summer time.

Yours truly,

D. M. ROBERTSON.

Toronto, March 19th, 1900.

Prof. James H. Hyslop,
Columbia University,
New York.

Dear Sir:—I have your letter with Post Office Order, for which I am obliged.

I saw Mr. Gordon today, and discussed the matter with him. He seemed to have nothing more to say, than he had intimated in his letter, a copy of which I send you. I will likely be down that way myself sometime during the summer, and if I can get any more information, I think will be of benefit to you, I will advise you.

Yours truly,

D. M. ROBERTSON.

Toronto, March 28th, 1900.

Prof. James H. Hyslop,
Columbia University,
New York.

Dear Sir:—I wrote to Mr. Gordon about your inquiry with regard to the word "Figuring," and he replies as follows:

Re my meaning of the word *figuring* in the Brodie matter. The Ryan women conveyed the impression that Higgy had walked up and down the log that led him to the position when he could reach the limb on which he hanged himself very frequently, just before he did commit the deed: as the log with the moss on it showed indications of being walked on a good deal: for pieces of bark had been knocked off the log, too. (The above is what I mean by *figuring* for some time). My idea is that possibly if there was foul play, the bark was knocked off by some one or more in their struggle to get Higgy up this log to the limb on which he was hanged, instead of Higgy walking up and down the log so much himself, as the Ryan women wished to convey. So my meaning for *figuring* for something was that he was meditating on it for some little time while in the bush, and just before committing the deed.

With regard to the other item: "McCaggerys" was printed for "McCaffreys."

Yours truly,

D. M. ROBERTSON.

New York, April 14th, 1900.

I incorporate above the reply to my questions by the person delegated for that purpose. On reading it over I saw that the word "figure" needed explanation and that there was either a mistake in the word "McCaggerys" for McCaffreys, or it referred to another family altogether. I therefore wrote to the man for explanation, and the letter in reply follows the original one.

In my letter asking for inquiry into the case I explained somewhat the facts before me, and my conjecture as to the possibility of foul play, and the investigator kept this sup-

position in mind, as his reply indicates. There are some circumstances that consist with the supposition of foul play, but I think that, when taken together, they do not render it in any way probable. It is non-proven, in spite of the convergence of several facts on the supposition. Yet we are bound to treat it as one of the possibilities in the case for the equal reason that it is not disproven. I think we can attach little weight to the marks on the bark of the tree. The handkerchief incident and the statements of Patrick McCaffrey are much stronger circumstances than anything ascertained in Canada. There is a discrepancy between the Canadian story of the handkerchief and that by Patrick McCaffrey, but the lapse of fifty-five years might well account for that. But on the whole I cannot see that the inquiry has thrown any special light on the foul play theory, except to show that we are as ignorant of it as before, and that it remains an unrefuted suspicion.

We are brought by this conclusion to a position in which it is impossible to go any farther with the case and entertain any hope of its solution. In so far as the boy is concerned who had the dreams, as already indicated, he may either have heard the matter of the papers talked over, or witnessed their burial when so young as not to recall the fact to his normal memory, or he may have both heard the facts and seen the papers buried, and forgotten them. Assuming, then, his honesty in the premises, there is the impossibility of removing the suspicion against the elder McCaffrey, as a condition of supposing that there is anything but the recrudescence of a latent memory in a dream, with some of the dramatic play of a secondary personality common in sleep. I concede the difficulties of affirming this from the standpoint of evidence in this particular case, but there is too much outside evidence in what we know of dream life and secondary personality to refuse that possibility its credence. Consequently the issue depends on an adequate knowledge of the facts at the time of the hanging and the relation of the elder McCaffrey to this Thomas Higgy. On this matter I feel that we have come up against a wall which we cannot penetrate, and that the inquiry cannot be extended any farther with any

hope of solving the problem. There are all sorts of possibilities consistent with either honesty or foul play, and until some positive choice can be made between them speculation regarding the case is useless. The dreams do not lose in psychological interest because of that fact, but we are cut off from supposing that we have anything of scientific worth beyond a striking instance of secondary personality assuming the spiritistic form.

Malone, New York, September 9th, 1900.

The enjoyment of my vacation in the northern part of New York gave me fortunately an opportunity to visit the locality of the dream and to interview personally some of the parties concerned regarding the facts. I called last night on Michael McCaffrey and his mother for this interview. He had been forewarned by one of the Jewett family of my coming and purpose and was prepared to receive me. The results of the interview may be stated very briefly as follows.

I was first taken to the old pine stump where the papers were said to have been found. It is still standing in fairly good condition, such of it as survived the fires intended to destroy it. On my return I was shown the two of the three flat stones between which the papers were found. The third stone, which was smaller than the two shown me, was said to have been placed between the other two and the paper on top of it. The arrangement described was well calculated in a rude way to keep the paper fairly dry, allowing the moisture to drain away under it. I questioned Michael on various matters concerning which the report already mentions details, but I record such statements as he made to me though they may involve repetitions of previous allegations.

I was told that the last dream occurred about three years ago and that he saw in it the dates of May 17th or 27th, 1900, on the ship *Umbria*, as indications of the time when he should get his money. He also saw Prof. Jewett and his father on the ship. Questioned regarding the newspapers that he had been accustomed to read before the time of the last dream he gave the *Malone Gazette*, which had been taken in the family for twelve or thirteen years, and the

Admiral
year
seen
dence
state
not a
except
major
himself
in his
the w
The
to inc
not in
altho
of a p
ignor
Th

* I
his rep
"A
before
fectly c
from a
word, c
paper.
that co
stated i
terested
In
garding
writing
For som
the wri
to guar
and on
manifes
this poi
The
allegatio
£4,000, v
have ha
mention
Michael
in the b
depend
whether
member

Adirondack News, which had been taken for the last five years. It is possible that the name of this ship had been seen in one of these papers, though I have no positive evidence of the fact. As to the appearance of the soldier he stated that the soldier always appeared beside the bed, but not always with exactly the same manner and appearance, except that he wore a tall woollen or fur hat such as a drum major usually wears, and such as Michael remarked he had himself seen in musical bands observed on various occasions in his life. I learned also from him that he was able to read the writing on the papers at the time they were discovered.* The trouble taken by Prof. Jewett to decipher them seemed to indicate that they could not be read. But as they were not immediately turned over to him they might have faded, although Michael's statement, it must be confessed, was that of a person who might have forgotten the facts, as he is too ignorant to have his memory trusted on a matter of this sort.

The interview with Mrs. McCaffrey was not so satisfac-

* I interrogated Prof. Jewett regarding this matter and the following is his reply in a letter dated Sept. 29th, 1900.

"As to whether the writing on the paper between the stones was legible before I applied the chemicals my recollection and my knowledge are *perfectly clear*. It was not legible. No feature or fact in the whole case is freer from any shadow of doubt or misgiving than this. No person could read a word, or half a word, or quarter of a word of what had been written on that paper. Two or three scattered strokes, seemingly by a pen, and *faint*, were all that could be distinguished. I think you will find essentially these facts stated in my correspondence with the Bank of England, if you should be interested to look it up."

In another letter of October 4th following Prof. Jewett further adds regarding this matter:—"The strength of the case for the non-legibility of the writing on that paper was not all given in my recent letter to you about it. For some time, as I am quite sure I related to you a year ago last Christmas, the writing on that paper was (supposed to be) my own secret. I kept it so to guard against any spurious spiritualism concerning it, on the one hand, and on the other, to provide corroborating circumstances for any possible manifestations of the kind that were genuine. Michael's later dream upon this point was the most impressive fact in the whole succession to me."

The accounts published in the newspapers at the time sustain these allegations of Prof. Jewett, as no other sum is mentioned in them than the £4,000, which was the amount on the paper in the bottle. Michael seems to have had a dream on the night of Nov. 8th, 1889, in which the £10,000 were mentioned as well as the former sum (p. 20). It is possible, therefore, that Michael's statement above was made with reference to the second paper found in the bottle and not the one found between the stones. Something would depend on the time he held the first paper before giving it to Prof. Jewett and whether it had faded any or not in the meantime. But Michael did not remember distinctly how soon after discovery it was taken to Prof. Jewett.

tory, though some important things eked out in the course of it. I questioned her with as much tact as I could command and with reference to her husband's complicity in obtaining the papers. I began with questions that led up to this issue. I found that she had married Patrick McCaffrey, Michael's father, about two years after he came to this country from Canada, and that she had never lived with him in Canada. He was about twenty-five years old, according to her statement, when he came to this country. He was about 57 years old when he died, and as he died in 1888, he must have emigrated about 1831. This would make him about fourteen years of age when Tom Higgey committed suicide about 1845. It was thus apparently Michael's grandfather that found the body of the suicide, and not Patrick McCaffrey, Michael's father.

I questioned her regarding their feelings and convictions when told of the dream before the papers were found. But I received only the statement that they both thought there must be something in it. I could not obtain clear and definite evidence that they felt any surprise or incredulity. I would hardly expect the latter trait, judging from the evident illiteracy of the people, though it is possible that the term illiteracy is not the right one to describe the situation. The mixture of bashfulness and ignorance and possibly reservations due to poverty and other considerations would account for the nature of the answer. With further reference to some early knowledge by Michael of the existence of some mysterious papers I inquired of her whether Michael's father had ever heard any talk about buried papers in that locality and the answer was that she did not recall any such knowledge on the part of any one. She was apparently confident that Michael's father had never heard anything about such an incident, though she showed in both her manner and her statement that she did not wish to deny this possibility and that she was ready to admit the fact if there were any evidence of it. Plied in various ways to uncover this possibility I always came around to the same point, her ignorance of any such fact and belief that it was not true. I then explained to her very carefully how such a dream might occur

with
little
men
that
defin
7
strain
had
tatin
spok
speak
his g
fact,
thou
fami
their
picio
reluc
I wi
impo
oppo
stati
expl
this
them
about
own
so th
knew
that
cern
Caff
coun
the i
what
ampl
migh
ject,
The

without being "supernatural," saying that if Michael as a little child had overheard any conversation on the facts the memory of it might recur as a dream without recognition that he had heard it. But this elicited no further or more definite information.

Then in order to get down to "hard pan" I put the straight question to Mrs. McCaffrey whether her husband had known a Mr. Higgey in Canada. The reply was a hesitating one and almost a flat denial. In a moment Michael spoke up and reminded his mother that his father used to speak of a man by that name who had committed suicide on his grandfather's farm. She then reluctantly recognized the fact, apparently conscious of more than she wished to tell, though this was natural enough when we remember that the family has been talked about in a very suspicious way by their neighbors and they know the facts upon which suspicions have been based. Unfortunately her hesitation and reluctance proves nothing under the circumstances, though I wish that I could assure myself that there was nothing important reserved from my knowledge. But I seized the opportunity to indicate all that I knew about the suicide, stating from whom I had obtained my information. I then explained another possible theory of the dream, namely, that this Tom Higgey might have owned the papers and buried them in this country himself and that he might have talked about them to Michael's grandfather in the presence of his own father, and the father to or in the presence of his son, so that the dream might have been instigated in this way. I knew that there was no evidence or probability whatever that Tom Higgey had ever seen the particular locality concerned, and it is especially interesting to know that the McCaffreys did not live for some years after removal to this country on the farm on which the papers were found. But the imaginary case was a good one to disarm suspicion as to what I was inquiring into, and to reinforce it I gave an example of cryptomnesia indicating just how the incident might occur. I was in a measure more successful in my object, as the two showed less reservation in their statements. The mother, however, knew nothing more than before about

the existence or stories regarding such papers. But she now very clearly indicated her knowledge of this Tom Higgey and his suicide, evidently supposing that I was not trying to revive information about the story of foul play regarding him. I ascertained in response to a question about the handkerchief that Higgey had often been observed to take a handkerchief out of his pocket, look at it and quickly return it to his pocket. I had in mind the handkerchief with which the man hung himself, but apparently Mrs. McCaffrey did not recognize this. As Higgey was apparently of unsound mind this incident may have no significance, though it is possible that it may still account for both the existence of the papers and their counterfeit character. At any rate it is consistent with, if it does not confirm, the suspicion that the papers may have been originally in the possession of this Higgey and have come into the hands of Michael's grandfather.

On the way home from the interview I was told by Miss Jewett of an incident in Michael's last dream that had been kept from me by Prof. Jewett on the urgency of his mother, as being too personal to tell me. It was that the old soldier told Michael in the dream that he would not get his money until he was in great need and that he would be turned out on the road poor and naked before he could get it. This Michael told the Jewetts at the time three years ago. Curiously enough quite recently in the spring, about the time indicated in the dream for the recovery of the money, the property of the family was sold at a sheriff's sale for debts and bought up by Michael's sister. I should have been told this fact of the statement in the dream before when the dream was reported to me. It has no specific significance, except to illustrate how difficult it is to get at all the facts in such cases and to suggest the probable source of the dream in the consciousness of poverty in which the McCaffreys have lived all their lives.

On the way to Malone today I questioned the man who brought me over in his buggy on his way to church. He lived with the Jewetts and his daughter married one of the Jewett sons. He was very sceptical regarding the whole

business. He was a man with some "horse sense" and intelligence regarding human nature generally, farming, etc., and interested me enough to inquire carefully into his own opinions of the affair and what people generally had thought about it. He was a little reserved at first, but I managed to draw him out by my questions and theory about it. He was very doubtful about the genuineness of the dream and believed that it had originated when Michael was awake, in other words a lie, and worked up for the purpose of getting a certain lady in the community for a wife. This was a new possibility to me, but I must say that both the facts as known and my observed knowledge of Michael would make me as sceptical of this theory as this man was of the dream. Besides his opinion would have been worth much more on this matter had it not been for certain manifest weaknesses in his stories about the case. For instance, he told me that the British officer figuring in the alleged dream had actually lived in the house with the McCaffreys and that he had suddenly disappeared, one of the McCaffreys suddenly returning to Canada soon afterward, and that Michael's father soon afterward died before the dream occurred. This whole narrative as above given with the dates and Prof. Jewett's investigations at the time one year before the death of Michael's father shows how much reliance is to be placed on such a story about a suspected case of foul play. It is simply a bad version of the story about the suicide and is connected with the suspicions and rumors circulating about the neighborhood at the time of the dream. Besides as discrediting his memory and judgment I found that several of his stories about the existence of certain lakes in the region where I was stopping were wholly false. Some of his statements about the matrimonial interests of the case were no better than idle gossip, though there may have been some basis for them. But their credentials are too weak for serious consideration, especially when we take into account the details of the incidents in connection with the dream. This, however, does not hinder us from supposing the possibility that such a trick would satisfactorily explain the phenomena, though the apparently honest effort on Michael's part to find an ex-

planation of the case hardly consists with such a theory, nor would one suppose him intellectually capable of so complicated a scheme. It is both too well and too badly done for that. I do question the possibility of much that would make it unnecessary to assume a mysterious dream origin for the case, but the evidence on the whole seems to me to favor such an origin rather than a conscious attempt at fraud of any kind.

New York, Feb. 5th, 1901.

I sent a few days ago for Mr. McCaffrey to come to this city where I could perform some experiments with him by hypnosis and he arrived last night. This morning soon after breakfast I first tried normal automatic writing in the waking state, but obtained no results, and not even any traceable tendency of it.

I then undertook to hypnotise him and found it very easy. Although it was the first attempt with him he went into the hypnotic state in about three minutes, showing in perhaps one minute that he could not open his eyes. In another minute he could not lower his arm when told that he could not. The first thing that I did was to ask him if he could write his name, and he did this in a scrawly fashion, but in style quite the same as in the normal state which I tested after he came out of the hypnosis. While in the hypnotic state I asked him if he remembered his dream and on receiving the answer yes, I asked him how long ago it was and the reply was in 1887. I then suggested that he see the old British soldier and asked him if he did so. He replied in the affirmative, and then I asked him to describe him. The answer was that he was a short thick set man. "I see him now, just as in the dream." The following colloquy then took place, which I shall put in the dialogue form.

Q. Does he want to say anything? A. Seems to.

Q. Ask him to give his name. A. Can you give your name please. [Pause.] Seems to be writing something.

Q. Can you tell what he is writing? A. Yes, looks like J. H. Enright.

Q. Can he say anything about those papers? A. He says the records are in an abbey.

Q. What abbey? A. Thornton.

Q. Sure its Thornton? A. That's what he says.

Q. Can he say how he got them? A. He says he put this money in the Bank and they gave them to him.

Q. Are any persons with him now? A. No, he is entirely alone now.

Q. Where did he live? A. Londonderry. Says I got good men to work.

Q. What did they work at? A. Professor Jewett is President of a Normal Institute. The other gentleman, he said, lives in Manhattan.

Q. When did he live in Londonderry? A. In 1774.

Q. What kind of work did he do there? A. Potter.

Q. Who was the chief ruler of the country? A. George, the Third, he claims.

Q. How did it come to you to do as you did about those papers? A. I was travelling through that country.

Q. What country? A. This country, America, overtaken by the Indians.

Q. I thought he was a soldier. A. He says he is, but was fighting in the war of the Rebellion. Had these papers with him. [Pause.] Says, perhaps I am talking too fast. (I said, no, all right.)

Q. What Rebellion? A. Says Rebellion in American Revolution.

Q. Who was the general over him? A. General Howe. Looks. [Pause.] J. H. Howe.

Q. How many men in the army? A. One hundred and eighty thousand, he says.

Q. How many on our side? A. One hundred thousand.

Q. Who was the general on our side? A. Washington.

Q. Can he tell who his captain was? A. Charles Kremunski.

Q. Did he bury those papers? A. Yes, he did. Seem to be changed in color. That tree was the giant of the forest there. Thought it would be a great place to put them as he could easily find them.

Q. How long before he was shot did he put them there?

A. About a month. [Answer was very prompt.]

Q. Describe how he came to be shot. A. Was fighting and these Indians took after him and shot him through the chest. The remains were buried about three miles north-west.

Q. Can he tell what I am doing now. [I here put my hand over Mr. McCaffrey's head and waved my pencil back and forth, his eyes being tightly closed.] A. Says I am in Brooklyn. No, across the bridge at a large house. A man at the house is a big man in business and that he is a fine gentleman. Greatly interested in these papers.

Q. Give his name. A. J. W. Hyslop.

Q. Was he fighting Indians at the time? A. Yes, Indians and Americans.

Q. What was the captain's name given a minute ago? A. Says name was Kremunski.

Q. Was any one with him when he buried the papers? A. Yes, says his captain was with him. Says they hunted for a good dry place for four days for some object that they could easily find. Carried those stones for about three miles. Dug the place with their sabres. Swords, he says now.

Q. Why did he not put both papers in the bottle? A. After he buried one he thought he would keep the other one, that he might escape with one. He was hotly pursued and put this other one in the bottle. He says it was most valuable. He says smeared the bottle with to keep it from drawing moisture.

Q. What did he smear it with? A. Acetylene. [Stammered over this.] Can't say it plain. Says he'll write it out. [Pause.] Says he made a mistake. [Here I placed the pad so as to let Mr. McCaffrey write out the answer and he made the attempt, but it was illegible. I asked that it be tried again, and the word "myrrh" was written in a scrawly manner, but plain enough to make the word quite legible.]

Q. Which paper did he put in the bottle? A. He says ten thousand pounds.

Q. What was his mother's maiden name? A. He's writing. I'll ask him in a minute. [Pause.] Says it was Macdonald.

Q. Where did she live? A. In Dublin.

Q. How old was he when he went into the army.

A. Twenty-seven.

Q. How old was he when he was killed? A. Thirty-one.

Q. Does he remember the name of the cashier who signed the certificates? A. Says he'll try and think of it. [Pause.] Says he thinks it was Peabody.

Q. Were they the original certificates or not? A. He says they were duplicates.

Q. Where were they, the originals? A. [Pause.] Says he got two sets.

Q. Where were the first set? A. He's just standing.

As I noticed that the answers were becoming a little more delayed and as I was satisfied with the experiment thus far I awakened the subject from hypnosis by the usual passes. As he awakened he seemed much surprised. I asked him if he felt as if he had been sleeping and the half dazed reply was: "I know the man. I know this professor." I then asked if he remembered any dream, and the reply was: "Yes, I could see that soldier. He looked natural as could be." I further asked him if he could remember anything else, and he said he could not.

Immediately after copying the results of the experiment I questioned Mr. McCaffrey to see whether I could obtain any connection between the names and certain specific details given in the hypnotic state and not occurring in the previous record. The result is the following:

Q. From what part of Ireland did your family come from? A. Mother said grandfather came from Westmeath, Meath County.

Q. Do you know any man by the name of Enright? A. There is such a family in the town of Moira (N. Y.). The folks said he is a trustee in our church.

Q. What are his initials? A. J. H. I do not know him personally.

Q. Describe Mr. Enright. A. Fair sized man, about five and a half feet in height, dark complexioned, black moustache, thin faced, about thirty-five or forty years of age, not thick set, and would weigh about one hundred and forty.

Q. Do you remember ever hearing any one say what he

thought was in the bottle besides the paper? A. I heard Mrs. Jewett say something about it. She took it to a druggist in Malone, I think, and he thought it might be myrrh. I think I heard Mrs. Jewett tell this twice.

Q. Did you ever hear of such a place as Thornton Abbey?
A. No, never did.

Q. Do you know anybody by the name of Thornton? A. There was a man who lived two miles from us. He was a rough man. Lives in Reynoldstown now.

Q. What do you know about Londonderry? A. Don't know anything about it,

Q. Do you know where it is? A. No, don't know where it is. Heard about it and have seen the name in the papers, but don't know whether it is in England or Ireland.

Q. What do you know about potters and the work of making pottery? A. It is something I don't know anything about at all. They don't make pottery where I live. The tile used in that region, I think, are brought in from elsewhere. I have seen them come in on the train.

Q. Did you ever read a book on the American Revolution. A. When young at school I remember something about the Ticonderoga business. Allen. Ethan Allen.

Q. Do you remember the name of any British generals about there? A. Seems to me I did read about General Howe holding a fort against an army.

Q. Do you know any one by the name of Kremunski?
A. No, I never heard of that name.

Q. Do you know any one by the name of Peabody? A. No, I don't, but have seen that name, I think, in the newspapers. A professor. He was some big man.

Q. When did you see this. A. I think I have seen it within a year. Peabody Institute. If I remember rightly, I think his picture was with it.

Q. Do you know where Peabody Institute is? A. No, I do not.

I hypnotized Mr. McCaffrey a second time in the evening to test a different matter from the morning experiment. I wanted to see if I could discover any traces of incidents in his memory that could not be elicited from his normal mem-

ory. The result shows an entire failure, or at least a failure to secure anything that would solve the problem and confirm the theory that I have started with in the attempt to explain the source of the dream. What further experiment may show remains to be seen. But the results of this second hypnosis are as follows.

Mr. McCaffrey went more easily into hypnosis than in the morning and was apparently in a sound trance in a minute. I started the colloquy by first sending him to his own home, that is, suggesting that he was there, and asking him if he saw his mother there. I received an affirmative reply. The colloquy followed.

Q. Do you remember your grandfather? A. Yes.

Q. Did he live in this country? A. Yes.

Q. Where did he live? A. In the town of Ft. Covington.

Q. Where is that? A. Joins Bangor.

Q. When did he die? A. I think in November, 1881.

Q. Do you remember talking with him? A. Yes.

Q. Was he ever in the war? A. No, sir.

Q. What did you talk about with him? A. I used to work for him a lot.

Q. Did he come from Canada? A. Yes.

Q. Did he come before your father? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did he ever live where you live? A. No, sir.

Q. When did he come to this country? A. About 1855.

Q. Did he go back to Canada at any time? A. I think he did, but not to stay.

Q. Did your father come to this country after your grandfather? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear your father talk about the papers before you found them? A. No sir, never.

Q. What did he think about them when found? A. He thought it very queer and that they must be good and to take them to Mr. Jewett.

Q. Did you ever read any where of people burying money? A. Think I heard grandpa or some one else tell about these Danes in Ireland burying money.

Q. Did you often think that you would like to find some in that way? A. Well, yes sir.

Q. Was that when you were a small boy? A. Yes, sir.

Q. How small? A. Oh, I heard them tell about it from the time I was able to know anything.

Q. They talked about it then? A. Yes, sir; he did, grandfather.

Q. How did he come to talk about it? A. I don't know. He was always talking about [Pause] always telling stories about one thing or another.

Q. Did he ever tell you that he had seen money buried? A. No sir, he never did.

Q. Go back to your early childhood and see if you can remember any one telling you about burying those papers at that stump. A. [Pause] No, I can't.

Q. You do not recall any one? A. No sir.

Q. What did people say about it? A. Some said it was a fraud.

Q. What kind of a fraud? A. They claimed that they were good for nothing.

Q. Did you ever hear anything said about your family in connection with the affair? A. No sir.

Q. Did any British soldier ever live in the house with your family? A. No sir, never. [Pause.] I don't know whether they— [Pause.] Pa's father was there two or three times. Don't think he was ever a soldier. I think they had to go through practice called mustering.

Q. Go back to the age of five or six years and tell me what you did then. A. Remember going to school.

Q. Do you remember standing by this stump? A. Yes, I remember being there.

Q. Was any one with you? A. Yes, my two brothers. I remember when I was a little boy that I worked around there lots, but I don't remember standing there. When the tree fell some one cut off a log about six or eight feet long, then two or three saw-logs.

Q. You don't remember seeing anything done by them when you were little? A. No sir.

Q. See if you remember seeing them bury those papers there. A. No sir.

Q. How did you come to dream about the papers? A. It was in winter. We were drawing potatoes to Bangor.

Q. Do you remember what made you dream about it at night? A. No sir, unless it was getting up wood.

Q. Tell me all you know about how those papers got there. A. I can't tell anything except what the soldier told me.

Q. Do you remember anything about Tom. Higgey? A. I remember hearing Pa tell about him. He said he (Higgey) used to come to his father's place. Don't know whether he was a near neighbor or not. He (Higgey) had a handkerchief which he carried in his pocket, or somewhere, and would take it out of his pocket, look at it and put it back quick.

Q. What do you suppose was in it? A. Pa never said. I think he said he ate breakfast there that morning, walked off, went to the woods, got up on a log, tied a handkerchief around a limb and stepped off.

Q. Who found him there? A. I heard Pa say the neighbors got up a gang and went out and found him. I think it was seven or eight days. I know well where the house is where he went from.

Q. Who found him, your grandfather or father? A. I don't know. I think father said the neighbors turned out and a party hunted for him. A man by the name of McMillan owns the farm now [Correct.]

Q. What was in Higgey's pockets? A. I never heard Pa say what. Seems to me I do remember he had a paper or plug of tobacco.

Q. What kind of paper? A. Not certain. Something about tobacco.

Q. Were there any papers in his pocket? A. Never heard of any, but probably something about tobacco. [Pause.] I wonder who that woman is?

Q. Where? A. Right there. Tall good looking woman, blue dress.

Q. Give her name. A. Says she is glad I am here. Says she won't tell her name just now.

Q. Did you ever see her before? A. No, sir. She is a stranger to me. Says she's glad Mr. Hyslop is working for me.

Q. Does she look very bright? A. Yes sir. Dark hair, forty or forty-five years old.

Q. Ask her why she does not tell her name. A. She says tomorrow.

Q. Let us go back to Mr. Higgey. Was he poor? A. Yes sir.

Q. Was he ever a soldier? A. Not that I ever heard. [Pause.] That's a nice looking woman.

Q. Still there is she? A. Yes sir.

Q. Tell her to say what she wants. A. Says she is coming to help us.

Q. Tell her to tell how the papers got by that stump. A. She says he did put money in the Bank, buried the papers, was killed and buried three miles northwest. Says she won't tell any more now.

Q. Ask her why. A. She's writing something now. Says she is a great friend.

Q. Find out what she is writing. A. Says the queen is going to come some day and disclose it. Nice writing. The card is right there.

Q. Where? A. [Finger pointed out directly toward the wall.] Says queen will give the writing to the Bank, that they will pay it at last. She wants to shake hands.

Mr. McCaffrey here put out his hand and went through the act of shaking hands when he suddenly jumped and drew his hand back with the expression "Golly," and waked up, apparently at least, and said: "Did you put any ice in my hand." I said, no. He replied: "I felt as if ice were put into my hand." I asked him if he saw any one, and the answer was that he saw some nice looking woman, but that this was all he could remember.

After Mr. McCaffrey had completely recovered normal consciousness I interrogated him on some points to see if his normal memory repeated any of the facts indicated under hypnosis. The following is the colloquy.

Q. Did your grandfather live in this country? A. Yes, mother's father.

Q. Where did he live? A. At Ft. Covington.

Q. Did your grandfather on your father's side live in this country? A. No sir. He came over two or three times. But he lived in Canada.

Q. When did your grandfather on your mother's side come over? A. I was born in 1860. Must have been five or six years before this.

Q. Have you heard him when you were young tell anything about burying money? A. Grandpa used to mention a class of people in Ireland who did it.

[It is interesting to note that he does not give the name of the people who buried money, as he did in hypnosis.]

In the following experiment I resolved to try for traces of supernormal phenomena of the clairvoyant or telepathic form. I hypnotized him easily and suggested that he go into a very deep sleep. When I thought him sufficiently hypnotized I tried several experiments at seeing what I held above his head, but he could not, and said he could not, see the objects. I then tried spontaneous automatic writing. I placed a pencil in his hand and told him to write whatever came into his mind. He wrote in a very scrawly manner what appeared to be a name, Miss M. A. C——. Rest undecipherable. I asked that it be written again and plainly. He then wrote more clearly the name: "Miss M. A. Connell" (pseudonym). The following colloquy took place.

Q. Do you see her? A. She is washing her separator.

Q. How did you come to think of her? A. Don't know. I see her so much.

Q. Did she ever have anything to do with the papers?

A. No, sir. She was greatly interested in them.

Q. Why was she interested in them? A. I don't know.

Q. Was she interested in you? A. We was always great friends.

I then turned the subject over to the papers and matters connected with their discovery, in order to see if I could unravel any secrets. The following is the colloquy on that point.

Q. Where did the stones come from between which the papers were placed? A. About three miles east, they found them.

Q. Who found them? A. The soldier.

Q. The soldier, who else? A. Another man that was with him.

Q. Who was with him? A. An Indian guide.

Q. What became of that Indian? A. He was killed.

Q. Who killed him? A. The whites.

Q. Who buried the soldier? A. The Indians buried him.

Q. Do you see that soldier now? A. Yes. But he is dressed differently from yesterday.

Q. How was he dressed yesterday? A. Dressed in a suit, I should think, of private. Today he is in uniform and a large black cap. There is Queen Victoria with him, they are hand in hand. She is talking to him.

Q. What does she say? A. They've gone clear back down there. They're to home now. He and she are standing right at the stump. I am standing between them. She says she'll see that it's got. She says if any of her help is needed to call on her.

Q. Ask her to give that soldier's name. A. She says his name was Enright. She says he was a good man.

Q. Ask him if the certificates were forged or not. A. She says they weren't.

Q. Ask him if he didn't find them in somebody's pocket? A. No, sir. He says he never did.

Q. Ask him if he knew Tom. Higgey? A. He says not. [Pause.] He and she are riding together—a span of nice grey horses.

Q. Ask him if he was an officer in the army. A. Yes, so he says.

Q. What position did he hold? A. First Lieutenant, he says.

Q. Well, let us come back to your grandfather. A. Yes, sir, he's coming. He says Tom. Higgey used to come to his house. He says he (Higgey) helped him to clear up his (McCaffrey's) farm.

Q. Ask him if he found Higgey hanging on a limb. A. Yes, sir, he says he did.

Q. Ask him if he found anything in Higgey's pockets. A. Yes, sir. He says they found a plug of tobacco. He is laughing. He says the boys passed the tobacco around and they took a chew of it.

Q. Does he remember Higgey taking out his handkerchief, looking at it and putting it back into his pocket quickly? A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was in it? A. He says there wasn't anything.

Q. Ask your grandfather if he buried the papers himself. A. He says he'll be back in a minute.

Q. See if you can get your father then, Ask him to come. A. Can't see him at all. [Pause.] Grandfather is there now.

Q. Ask him if he buried those papers there. A. He says he didn't [Pause.] He says Higgey was a poor, poor man. He says he'll try and get Higgey here in a day or two.

Q. Tell him to bring your father here. A. Well, there, there, now.

Q. Do you see him? A. Yes.

Q. How does he look? A. Looks as natural as can be. His face is all better. Don't that beat all. How quick that healed up. I am glad that's healed up. [Mr. McCaffrey's father died of a cancer in the face.]

Q. Ask him what he knows about those papers. A. He says he don't know anything. Says he knows they were there. If they were any good he would have had them dug up long ago. He would not have cut cordwood as he did.

Q. He knew then they were there before digging for them. A. No, sir, he says not. Says that the tree was cut down before he came on the farm. He says he thinks it was McCloud who cut it. It was wild land surrounded with timber.

Q. Ask him if he ever had those papers himself. A. No, he says he did not.

Q. Let him go away a little while. A. Yes, sir.

Q. Go back when you were a little boy. A. Yes, sir.

Q. How tall are you? A. About three feet. I lived in the other house. Living with grandpa and grandma.

Q. Do you remember that at that age you saw these papers? A. No, sir. I can't.

Q. Do you remember any one talking about it? A. Heard grandpa and grandma talk about people burying money in Ireland.

Q. Do you think you put the papers there yourself when a young man? A. No, sir.

Q. Sure of that? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Why did you want the money? A. [Pause.] I don't care anything about it.

Q. You did at one time, did you not? A. I like money.

Q. Did you want to get married at that time? A. No, sir.

Q. Did anybody want to marry you? A. I don't know. I was married once.

Q. To whom? A. A girl in Canada.

Q. What name? A. Bessie Souvie. He was asked to spell the name, which he did.

Q. Is she living now? A. No, sir.

Q. When did she die? A. In August, 1895.

Q. How long did she live with you? A. About two and a half years.

Q. This was after the papers were found? A. Yes, sir.

At this point I resolved to try automatic writing and I placed a pad in Mr. McCaffrey's hand with a pencil and asked him to tell me all about the papers he dug up. He wrote at once in an almost illegible style: "They came from London in England & I * * [illegible]. By the (?) * * ." [scrawl.] I then asked who was writing this, and a name was written out in letters too illegible to read, and I asked that it be done again and more slowly and clearly. The hand then wrote "Patrick McCaffrey," [this is the name of my subject's father, who died in 1888,] and "M. A. Cnell" "Noth Bagor," [evidently intended for "M. A. Connell, North Bangor." This last name is the same as the one with which the experiment began.]

At this point I determined to awaken the subject. I told

him to awaken and he at once sat up in great surprise and looked at me in a startled manner. I at once asked him what he saw and he turned in the direction of the place in which he appeared in hypnosis to see his objects, and said that he saw the soldier. I suggested seeing him still, and he, with eyes open said he still saw him. I asked him to describe the soldier, and he said he had on a red coat and black hat. To test the illusion still further I told him to strike the chair with his hand and he did so, and on my asking him if there was any difficulty in doing this, he remarked that there was some trouble in the upper part of the arm. I repeated the command to awaken and he came at once into normal consciousness, and could neither see the soldier longer nor remember anything that had happened.

After Mr. McCaffrey had recovered normal consciousness, say some ten or fifteen minutes after awakening him, I interrogated him for the same reasons as in other like cases. The following is the result.

Q. Did you ever live in any other house than you do now? A. Yes, sir.

Q. How old were you when you did so? A. I lived in another house when grandfather lived in Ft. Covington. I was born there and lived with grandpa until I was 5, 6 or 7 years old.

Q. Who cut that tree? A. Pa said it was cut when we came there. I think a man by the name of McCloud cut it.

Q. Did you ever know any one by the name of Bessie Souvie? A. Yes, I married her.

Q. When? A. I think it was June 29th, 1894.

Q. Is she living? A. No, sir, she died August 3 in 1896, I think.

The intimate connection of these normally known facts, as in the other cases exhibits its own significance.

The next experiment was undertaken for the purpose of testing the opinion of the gentleman who told me last summer that the whole story of the papers had been fabricated in order to secure a certain lady in marriage. The name of this lady, Miss M. A. Connell (pseudonym), having been spontaneously and automatically written during the previous

experiment, suggested to me the possibility that the story which I had distrusted last summer might have some basis for its existence.

The subject was hypnotized almost instantly and was asked where he was within half a minute after he sat down. He replied that he was at Mr. Jewett's. I asked then whom he saw and the reply was Mr. Howe (Mr. Howe is the father-in-law of one of the Jewett sons, and is living at the Jewett home). I asked what he was doing and the answer was: "Lighting a lantern." Mrs. Jewett was then mentioned and I asked what she was doing and the reply was: "Sitting at the table reading." The subject then remarked: "The girl is there," and the following colloquy began.

Q. Who is the girl there? (I had in mind the subject's own sister, who was the servant when I visited the Jewetts last summer.) A. Mary Connell.

Q. Is she the sister of? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did Mary Connell know anything about the papers when they were found? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you like her pretty well at that time? A. Yes, sir.

Q. You wanted to marry her, didn't you? [Here the subject hesitated, slightly squirmed and laughed a moment, but said], A. Oh, yes, I'd like to.

Q. Did any one else know that besides yourself? A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever wait on her. A. No, sir.

Q. Did any one tell about the neighborhood that you wanted to marry Miss Connell? A. No, sir. [Pause.] I am clear back where we used to live. Grandpa and grandma.

[As the first part of the experiment purported on its face to represent clairvoyance I resolved to test the matter at this point and sitting in front of the subject whose eyes were closed I asked him if he could see any of my family up stairs. Slowly the reply came, "Yes, I see Mrs. Brain and George." He could not see any one else, though they were altogether in the same room. I then asked him if he could see what I was holding up before him,

and the reply was that it looks like a book. I had a writing pad in my right hand and a pencil in my left, the latter being the article that I was holding up for his clairvoyance. I then held the pencil over near his hand and asked him if he could see what I was holding there. The reply came that he could not. On other occasions I observed that anything that he did not know or had not seen in any particular place, he could not see, but he could see familiar persons and things in places with which they had been connected in his experience. The colloquy then proceeded by his spontaneously remarking that he saw the queen of England there again.]

Queen Victoria and that man are there again. They are riding in a carriage drawn by four horses. They are driving down to that place where the papers were found.

Q. Ask the man if he is sure that he told the truth about those papers. A. Yes sir, he says he has.

Q. Ask him if he doesn't think some one stole those papers, buried them by that stump and talked about it where you heard him. A. The queen says he is a good man. He says no one stole them. She says she is coming some day to give her evidence.

Q. Has your grandfather gotten Higgey yet? A. He is there.

Q. Your grandfather? A. Yes sir. There's a man coming, two of them.

Q. Give the names of both. A. John McCaffrey.

Q. Who is John McCaffrey? A. My grandfather.

Q. Who is the other man? A. This man says he is Higgey. He's a queer looking man.

Q. Describe him. A. About five and a half feet, fleshy man, plain face, age about 50 years.

Q. Ask him if he knows anything about those papers. A. No sir, he claims not. Says he used to come to grandfather's house and work for him. He was alone in the world, had trouble and trials, got sick of life and done this. Says he knew Pat McCaffrey and was a warm friend of his.

Q. Ask him what was in that handkerchief. A. He says that when he bought it it was his intention to hang himself with that handkerchief.

Q. Did he hang himself with that handkerchief? A. Yes sir, he says he did

Q. Didn't he hang himself with Pat McCaffrey's handkerchief? A. No, he says not. He says he bought it himself. He says the tree is standing there yet.

Q. Why did your father talk about the suicide of Higgey? A. I heard him often tell that he went through the woods at that spot and that when he did it made his hair stand.

Q. Did people say anything about your father's having done anything to Higgey? A. No sir, not that I know of.

I here told the subject to wake up, and he suddenly opened his eyes and looked at me in a dazed manner. I seized the chance to ask him if he did not see the soldier over by the mantle place and he replied that he did. I told him to describe him and the answer was: "He's in officer's uniform, round black hat somewhat like [that worn by a] band [leader]."

Q. Do you see any arms? A. Only a sword.

Q. Don't you see any pistols? A. No. "[looking carefully]." I then told him to awaken and he did so, but could remember nothing of what had been done and said.

In the next experiment, morning of Feb. 7th, I resolved to test the question of clairvoyance more fully. Immediately after hypnotizing the subject I took my watch in my hand and held it about one foot from his head and at the side, his eyes being closed, and asked him what I was holding in my hand. After a pause, which always occurs in this experiment, I noticed, he said: "A watch." I asked how he knew, and the reply was: "Looks like it." I then asked if he could hear it tick, and he said: "No, sir." I then took a small bottle from my desk, and holding it enclosed in my hand, asked if he could tell what this was, and he said: "It looks like a book." I opened my hand and repeated my question, and he said he saw my hand, and in a moment said that it looks like a rainbow. I changed the position of the bottle in the hand and held it directly before the subject's face about a foot away, his eyes being tightly closed and he thought it a pencil. I then told him to open his eyes. When he had done so I held the bottle in front of him and asked what it was, and the reply

was: "A bottle." I asked if he was sure, and he looked at it more carefully and said he was sure. I asked if it was not a knife, and he replied that it was not, that it was a bottle. I said rather firmly that it was a knife, and he looked at it scrutinizingly and said that he could not see the knife. I then told him to close his eyes again, which was immediately done, and with an apparently sudden change into another state, although he was in a hypnotic state all the while.

I then suggested that he would not know his name, and in a moment asked him what his name was. He hesitated and I said, "Can you do it?" He replied: "No sir." I then tried another clairvoyant experiment by placing an envelope on his arm, telling him that I had placed something there, and asked him to tell what it was. His reply was that it was a pencil. Pinching him, I asked if he felt that and he said: "A little bit, kind of pinching," while he smiled.

Just previous to this little colloquy, which was carried on in order to get my suggestion to work, I had told him that his name was Sam Patch, and that he must remember this. After the momentary diversion to let this work the colloquy proceeded as follows:

Q. What did you say your name was? A. Sam Patch.

Q. Did you ever hear of Michael McCaffrey? A. Yes sir, he's a son of Pat McCaffrey.

Q. Where did he live? A. At Bangor.

Q. When did you get acquainted? A. When he was a little boy.

Q. Was there anything remarkable in the life of Michael McCaffrey? A. He found some papers once.

Q. Ask him if he is not fooling about the papers. A. No sir, he says not.

Q. Where is Michael now? A. Way off in a big city.

Q. What city? A. Looks like New York.

Q. Where are you, Sam Patch? A. I'm in Malone.

Q. Where did you live? A. In Malone.

Q. When did you live there? A. Always lived there.

Q. How long ago? A. About 35 or 40 years ago.

Q. Are you living or dead? A. Living.

Q. Ask Michael if he did not see the papers buried when he was a little boy. A. No sir, he says not.

Q. Ask Michael if he liked Miss Connell. A. Yes sir, he says he did as a friend.

Q. Was that about the time he found the papers? A. No sir, always from the first time he met her about twenty years ago.

Q. Ask him if he wanted to marry her about the time the papers were found. A. He says not.

Q. When was it that he first wanted to marry her? A. Since his wife died he says.

Q. Did he ever think of it before? A. He says not.

Q. Ask Michael if he did not use those papers in order to gain Miss Connell. A. No, sir, he says he wouldn't do such a thing. Says he always liked her as a friend, but he had no hope of getting her as she was well off and he was poor.

Q. Ask Michael if he hoped to get her the time the papers were found. A. No, sir, he says not.

Q. Ask him if he thought about her then. A. Says he brought the papers home and she came out and was greatly interested in them.

Q. What did she say about them? A. She wanted to know about them.

Q. Did Michael tell her then that if he could get the money then they could get married? A. No, he says, he wouldn't dare to tell her such a thing.

Q. Were Michael and she often together? A. He used to go down there often. * * * * there and I suppose that was the reason. He could never get her.

Q. Did Michael and Miss Connell talk together a good deal? A. Yes, sir, he says they did.

Q. Where? A. In the house.

Q. Did anybody suspect Michael's purpose? A. No, sir.

Q. Did Michael have any desire at that time to marry her? A. He might, but I don't think it would do him any good.

Q. Ask Michael if he ever believed in spirits? A. Yes, sir, he says he did. He says he never did until him and Mr. Jewett went to Malone.

Q. Ask him if he ever saw any since then. A. No, sir, he says not. Says when him and Mr. Jewett went out to Malone and saw Mrs. Drake and had a sitting there. She'd ask questions whilst we sat there. [There was some confusion here and in the hesitation I asked who asked questions, and the reply was that he and Mr. Jewett did. I further asked if Mrs. Drake asked questions and the answer was that she did some.] Raps would come under the table. While sitting there a red handkerchief came floating down from the upper story of the house and fell on Mr. Jewett's shoulder. He went out again in September. The first visit was in June, I think. Went to the same house to see Mrs. Drake and Miss Ladd. Greatest medium in the world.

Q. Who was the greatest medium in the world? A. Mrs. Drake said Miss Ladd was. Said she told about some foreign writing in an abbey. Mrs. Drake told of some writing in a foreign country and that Miss Ladd had told where it was and they went and found it was so. He wrote to one of those astrologers future protection that you see in advertisements in papers. It was Mlle. [pronounced Millie but spelled "Mlle"] with astro at the bottom of it. Told him there was good luck for him in 1900 or 1901. 1901 would be a lucky year for him. Told when he was born and the signs that went with him. Don't think they ever believed much in that. Just done it for curiosity.

I see Michael and the queen standing in a great building. Looks like a bank. There is a man inside a railing. She is talking awfully earnestly to him. She has some kind of papers in her hand. Michael is signing them now. He's took them back now and the fellow has accepted them. Look at the gold he's a shoving. I guess Michael will want a bag. Says the queen told him to change that and get paper. She's done her mission. He's trundling out of the bank. Guess he'll have a load. Both are gone now.

Q. Ask Michael what he'll do with that money. A. Says he don't know. He says the banks won't pay nothing for it. Prof. Jewett is there now. He has the half of that. Michael is paying it to him. He ought to pay the other man the quarter of it, that helped him.

Q. Who is he? A. That other man in the big city. He's worked hard for me.

Q. Do you know him? A. J. H. Can't say it right.

Q. Don't know how to say it? A. H-Y-S-I-L-O-U-P is the way to spell it. Prof. Jewett says he must go back.

Here the subject suddenly opened his eyes and sat up as awake, though the stare in his look rather indicated that the hypnosis was not in fact thrown off. I at once started the colloquy as follows.

Q. What was the last thing you thought of? A. I saw Mr. Jewett.

Q. Have you waked up? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are you sure? A. Yes.

Q. What is your name? A. [Pause] Sam Patch.

Q. Did you ever hear of Michael McCaffrey? A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are you Michael McCaffrey? A. [Pause and looking around]. This room seems to be all awirling.

Q. Are you Michael McCaffrey? A. I don't know. [Pause and looking around.] The clock is bottom side up. Those books is different from what they was. They're end-ways. The pictures is bottom side up. There's that queen and that soldier standing along side a big brick building. They're inside. I see "second cashier" over the window. He's shoving out gold now. They are vanishing out of sight.

At this point I made him close his eyes and suggested that in five minutes after awakening him I would ask for his name and that he would say Sam Patch. I then awakened him. We sat talking about his trip down town to see the Brooklyn bridge and the bay and the aquarium. He expressed his delight in the excursion and was completely awake and normal. I watched the clock closely, and right in the midst of a sentence, when the time was up, about his excursion, I suddenly asked: "What is your name?" Michael instantly looked slightly dazed and paused for four or five seconds and at once said: "Sam Patch." He showed evidence of being puzzled and looked dazed about the room. I told him to wake up and he at once became normal. I asked him what he had said and he replied that he did not

know. I then told him what I had done and he was as surprised as he was half ashamed of it. I could feel no doubt, so far as the indications present suggested it, that he went temporarily into hypnosis the moment I asked him my question about his name.

The next experiment (evening of Feb. 7th) was undertaken to clear up one or two points omitted before and to try a spiritistic representation, as it is noticeable all along that the case assumes that appearance. The result will speak for itself. The object was to test the extent to which the dramatic representation of spirits depended on the subliminal access to the facts of normal experience, and what the facility for fabricating personality that is independent of that experience. The hypnosis was effected in a moment as usual, and the colloquy began.

Q. Were you able to read the paper immediately after you found it between the stones? A. I could read part of it. Amount of pounds blotted. Date was 1775 or 6. Could read part of the certificate.

Q. Could you read it before you took it to Professor Jewett? A. Yes sir.

Q. Could you read the second paper when you found it in the bottle? A. No sir, not much of it.

Q. How much of it? A. Amount could not make out whether it was ten or a hundred thousand pounds. Looked like ten. Badly smeared up with something. Bottle was broken bad.

Q. Why did Professor Jewett have to use chemicals? A. To bring it out he said.

Q. Could he read any of it before he put chemicals on them? A. He said not.

Q. Did you take both papers to him at the same time. A. I think I did. I am not so sure of that.

Q. Are you sure you could read some of the writing when the papers were dug up? A. The one between the stones? [This was the subject's question to me. I answered "Yes," and he replied]: "Yes, sir."

I resolved here to change the direction of the experiment

to try the spiritistic representation. I first suggested seeing Professor Jewett in order to start his mind in the direction of suggested hallucinations. The colloquy proceeded as follows:

Q. Do you see Professor Jewett? A. Yes sir.

Q. Where? A. In a big building. He is sitting down writing.

Call up my father and see if you can see him. A. I see quite a tall man.

Q. Tell your grandfather to bring my father. A. He says he'll try and bring him.

Q. Tell me when he does. A. There's a man with him.

Q. Tell him to give his full name. A. This is his brother in Ireland grandfather says.

Q. Tell him to get my father. A. He says he'll try in a few minutes to get him. They don't seem to come. Says he can't come tonight.

Q. Why not? A. Can't leave.

Q. Why can't he leave? A. Grandpa is writing.

Q. See what he is writing. A. Says the man cannot leave because he is in communication with the angels. He'll try and come tomorrow.

Q. Ask your grandfather what they do over there. A. Says he's doing nothing. He's happy.

Q. What makes him happy? A. Says your father and him is happy together.

At this point I resolved to try another experiment at post-hypnotic suggestion. I said to the subject that five minutes after waking him and when I struck my pencil on the desk he would take the brass candlestick on the mantel piece and put it on the floor. I immediately told him to awaken. He opened his eyes. But it was apparent from his answers to questions which were intended to provoke conversation that he was still under hypnosis. However I kept him engaged and at the end of the five minutes tapped my pencil rapidly on the desk three times. Hardly had I made the first stroke when he arose and went to the mantel piece took the candlestick and placed it on the floor. He then sat down. I

repeated my request to wake up, and he did so at once. The hypnosis clearly passed off and not until then. It was thus interesting to observe that the suggestion to awaken would not take effect until the act that I had suggested had been performed.

The next experiment was a brief one merely to exhibit the process to two persons in the house. I tried to repeat the spiritistic effort in pursuance of the promise at the last one, but it resulted only in an exact repetition of the evasion mentioned above, namely, that my father couldn't leave and that he was talking with the angels. Then I suggested that five minutes after I had awakened him and when I struck the table with my pencil he would say to Mrs. B——: "You read a book." I then told him to wake up. As usual he appeared to do so, opening his eyes and sitting up. But it was evident from his sleepy manner and the inability to spontaneously converse with me as in the first attempt in the earlier experiment, that he was still under hypnosis. I made repeated efforts to awaken him completely by commanding it, but I did not appear to effect it. The moment the five minutes were past I struck the table and he immediately arose, went toward Mrs. B—— and said: "Mrs. B—— will you read that book?" I then easily awakened him completely by a single order.

The next experiment was undertaken only to show a friend an instance of hypnosis and suggestion. I first tried the production of the usual dream images based on the subject's memory, allowing him to form and state his own experiences in this state. I then told him that after awakening him and when I tapped my pencil on the desk he would clap his hands and say, Hurrah for Grant. I then continued some questions and conversation with him in the hypnotic state in order not to have the post-hypnotic suggestion too closely connected with the giving of it. After a minute or two of conversation and dreaming I told him to awaken. He opened his eyes, but was evidently half or wholly under hypnosis still. I talked with him a little about his visit to the theater in the afternoon, and also exchanged some conversa-

tion with my friend. In about two minutes I tapped my pencil on the table and immediately he clapped his hands and said: "Hurrah for Grant."

I then told him to go to sleep and I repeated the general performance of conversation in the midst of which I told him that four minutes after I awakened him he would say, "Dad bob it." I kept him in the usual hypnotic condition a few minutes with conversation and then awakened him. He seemed to be more nearly awake if not wholly so this time. I waited five minutes and he did not fulfill the suggestion. But I then tapped my pencil on the table and he at once said: "Dad bob it."

When I first made the suggestion I said five minutes, but I immediately changed it to four. This was the reason that I waited five minutes before tapping the desk with my pencil. Possibly my change of mind in the time confused him, though I was careful to repeat the suggestion of four minutes several times in order to destroy the idea of five. At any rate the suggestion did not take effect until the *point de repere* involved in tapping the desk and which had been the stimulus resorted to before had been established. The psychological features of the result are quite as interesting as the perfect fulfilment of the suggestion would have been.

The last thing done in the experiment last night (Feb. 8th) was to suggest to the subject while in hypnosis that he would dream about the old soldier and the papers. I told him also that he should tell it to me in the morning when he came to breakfast. When he came to the table at breakfast I asked him if he had dreamed during the night and he said that he had. I then asked about what he had dreamed, and the reply was the old soldier and the papers. After breakfast I had him narrate the dream which I took down in full as follows:

"I thought I was to home and standing by the stump and this man dressed in the uniform of an officer with a red coat and high hat. The queen also was there. This was the place where the papers were found, she said, and here is Mr. Jewett and a man in New York are working for him. (The

subject remarked that he could see me there, but not Mr. Jewett.) She said the papers are good and I am going to help him get the money. I thought we were way off on the water in a large steamer. I thought I got off and went up a big hill or street and went into a big brick building. She stepped up. I had the papers in my hand, and she said, let me see them. She took them over to a desk put her name on them, turned around to me and laughed and said, I guess they'll go now as my name is on them. A big man with a black moustache was cashier. He took them and said: 'Your name is good anywhere.' He said to her, 'Do you want paper or specie?' She said, 'Paper as it is easier to carry.' He put out package after package all done up. She turned to me and said: 'I guess that'll do it this time.' I offered her, I thought, some of the money. She said she had lots herself. I thanked her and thought I woke up."

After the previous experiments it is hardly worth remarking for the reader that the contents of this dream represent much of the very subject matter called out in the dream life under hypnosis. The story is nearly the same in some details with the omission of myself and Mr. Jewett from the disposal of the money. There is some fertility of imagination in supplying additional material, but in the main the cue is the natural interest in securing the supposed value of the papers.

The present experiments I have just completed (5.15 P. M., Feb. 9th, 1901.) I hypnotized my subject and after ascertaining that I could produce hallucinations, I suggested to him that four minutes after I awakened him and without any signal from me he would come to me and say "mixed pickles." I then awakened him, but it was apparent that he was still under hypnosis, as he showed a half sleepy look and manner. There was no disposition to talk except in response to question. I talked to him, however, about our little excursion down town. Promptly at the end of the four minutes, just as the clock began to strike he arose, came to me and said: "Mixed pickles." I then told him to wake up, and he did so, assuming a different expression, and I asked what he had done, and he could not tell.

Thinking that perhaps the striking of the clock might have served as an unconscious suggestion instead of my previous signals I resolved to try the experiment again. I re-hypnotized him and suggested that in nine minutes without any signal from me he would come to me and say, "mutton chops." I then awakened him and began talking to him. He appeared still to be hypnotized and I wrote a short letter and renewed my conversation about our trip down town. I remarked that a man would have a poor chance in one of those tall buildings if an earthquake attacked it. His hearty laugh and natural manner in this seemed to indicate that he was in his normal state, and I thought him so. I kept him in conversation on this and a few other matters until the time was up. I did not look at the clock, but promptly at nine minutes after the suggestion he arose, came to me, and said: "Mutton chops."

I then told him to awaken and he seemed not to do this immediately, so I asked him if he was awake and he replied that he was not entirely. He said he was dizzy and things were whirling. I spoke to him in a slightly imperative manner to wake up and he did so instantly, saying that he was fully awake. I asked him if he remembered what he had done and he did not. I asked him if he remembered what we had talked about a few moments before. He replied that he did not. I further asked if he remembered our talking about the tall buildings and the effect of an earthquake on them. He replied that he remembered we had visited some of them this morning, but he did not recall any mention of an earthquake. I repeated my query to know if he did not recall that I had only a few minutes before remarked how poor a chance a man would have in one of these tall buildings if an earthquake happened. The emphatic reply was that he did not remember anything about remarks of this kind.

The following experiments were undertaken to show a friend what could be done by hypnosis. They took place in the evening of the same day as those just previous. After hypnotizing the subject and testing him for hallucinations I suggested that in five minutes after I awakened him and without any signal from me he would say that his name was

Sam Patch. I told him to wake up, and he opened his eyes as usual after this command, but was evidently asleep. In exactly five minutes without any indication from me he leaned forward and said: "My name is Sam Patch." I told him to wake up, and he did so and as usual said that he remembered nothing of what he had done.

I re-hypnotized him and suggested that when I struck my pencil on the desk he would say to me: "I want some pumpkin pie." I then told him to awaken, and the usual appearance of this occurred, although the close observer would see that he was still hypnotized. I engaged in conversation with him and my friend and without any warning from myself to him I took out my pencil and tapped my desk, when he instantly arose and said: "I want some pumpkin pie."

I hypnotized him again and after a few moments awakened him without any suggestion of my intention, which was to suddenly ask him his name. My main purpose in trying the experiment was to see if I could awaken him before trying the question. I told him to wake up, and he did so. This time the normal state was evident in both his conversation and manner. While engaged in conversation with him and my friend I suddenly interrupted with the question, firmly asked, "What is your name?" He jumped as if frightened and then slowly said: "Sam Patch." Here the instant hypnosis was quite evident.

This evening (Feb. 10th, 1901), I hypnotized my subject in order to try the experiment of connecting the normal memory with the hypnotic suggestion. Hitherto as the report shows he had no memory of what he did in response to suggestion. When I hypnotized him I suggested that when I tapped my pencil on my desk after awakening him he would say "mush pudding" and remember what I told him. I then awakened him and engaged him in conversation for a moment and then tapped my pencil on the desk. Immediately he stirred in his chair and said "mush pudding." In a moment I asked him if he remembered what he had said and he replied in the negative. He appeared to be under hypnosis and I told him to waken up a second time and asked him

if he was ready to go to bed, as he had intimated before the experiment that he thought he would retire if I had no work with him. He said yes he was awake, and showed it in his manner. In a moment or two he remarked that he had said "mush pudding." I was not certain whether he returned into hypnosis for the moment or not. He did not at first realize the absurdity of his response to the suggestion, but did so in a moment by laughing at it.

I then spent a few minutes describing to him what I had been doing in my experiments and when I was certain that all the effects of hypnosis had been obliterated I asked him in his normal state about his visit to the "medium" Mrs. Drake in order to have him tell the incidents connected with Miss Ladd. I asked him first if a Miss Ladd was present and after an affirmative reply I asked if she was a "medium" and in this I received also an affirmative answer. I then asked if she had ever done anything remarkable in this line. The reply was: "Yes, they said there were some old records way back which she tried to find. She told them in writing (as she was a writing medium) right where they were to be found and that they were in some old abbey in London." It is apparent that the source of the dream was about the papers in an abbey, as recorded above (p. 389).

I must record also that on the last three evenings I have suggested to the subject that he would sleep well after his return home. He has complained of insomnia for the last two months. I also told him when I made the suggestion that he would write to me after two weeks and let me know how he had been sleeping.

I should also remark that in the experiments involving post-hypnotic suggestion and the possible mensuration of time that there was a clock standing on the mantle piece in the room. It was, however, a French clock whose tick is so difficult to hear that it cannot be heard ten feet away except that favorable conditions of quiet and close attention are present, and perhaps specially good hearing. I had tested the subject for auditory hyperaesthesia and found this absent. He could not hear my watch tick one foot away, but could do so at a distance of four inches. I was also careful to ob-

serve when I made the suggestions that his eyes were tightly closed and after awakening him I also noticed that he never looked at the clock. His attention was given to me or to nothing at all, and besides I so occupied him with conversation most of the time that he could not have normally heard the clock if he had tried. Consequently there was no evidence that he in any way ascertained the lapse of time by any normal methods. His only resource would have been to count the ticks of the clock under conditions of hyperaesthesia, conditions which would hardly be regarded as normal in any case. Whatever his methods of ascertaining the correct time to fulfill the suggestion, whether subliminal or supraliminal, they were not connected with visual perception and attention. I was extremely careful to observe his action in this regard and can only refer his precision to some unusual process of calculating time.

New York, Feb. 21st, 1901.

I received this evening a letter from Michael McCaffrey in which he says: "Well, Mr. Hyslop, my trip to New York has caused me to sleep well since I came home, and I shall never forget that you told me that I would sleep good after I came back." There is, of course, no evidence in this that the sleep was due to my suggestion.

CONCLUSION.

The chief object that I had in bringing my subject to the city was to test what I could accomplish in the confirmation of my theory by hypnosis. That theory was that at some time, perhaps when very young, he had seen or heard of the papers, and seen or heard of their burial, so that the dream might have been a revival of those memories. The intention was to tap his memory when he would show no resistance to interrogation on matters that the normal memory might wish to remain in secrecy. I assumed also that I might excite recollections that the normal consciousness could not reach. But while I was successful in arousing a slightly clearer memory than in the normal state in regard to a few

NOTE. A letter in October of same year states that he is still sleeping well.

details, on the whole the two memories were the same. I did not succeed, however, in corroborating my theory. This must be frankly confessed at the outset. I tried this in various ways. First I tried to ascertain the facts as far as possible regarding Tom Higgey, to see if there was any ground for suspicion of foul play respecting him. The facts show just what I ascertained from other sources, and moreover seem to indicate that the story of his hanging himself with McCaffrey's handkerchief is somewhat confused. To me the record indicates that there is no satisfactory evidence for either foul play against Higgey or the discovery of the papers in his pocket, however much we may choose to think that this is still possible. The evidence does not favor it, though it may not be opposed to it.

As I saw a tendency in the subject to assume a spiritistic form in the personality of the parties concerned, I seized the opportunity to experiment in a way calculated to probe his memories to the uttermost. I suggested at suitable times the various persons deceased that might be supposed to have known the facts, and succeeded in producing, evidently, distinct hallucinations of them, so as to carry on a simulated conversation with them, as the record indicates. I hoped to excite his own memory by association in this manner to tell what it might otherwise forget or reserve. But this plan was no more successful than the other. I then tried the entire suppression of his own personality, so that, if possible I could make his memory entirely impersonal. This was the object of the experiment in suggesting that he was not Michael McCaffrey, but Sam Patch. The part of another than his own personality was well enough played, as the record will show, but it wholly failed to secure any more information than the other devices. Not one iota of evidence against the genuinely supernormal character of the dream could be obtained. Of course there is not enough evidence to show that it was supernormal, but assuming that it was not, we should have obtained, perhaps, some indications of that fact. The whole mystery, however, remains just where it was before. There is no satisfactory normal or supernormal explanation of the dream in the first instance.

There are nevertheless some matters of collateral interest. The experiments throw much light upon certain facts in connection with the incident as a whole. They show to my judgment an undoubted connection between the normal and the hypnotic memory. Hypnosis did not excite anything supernormal in the subject's memory. His memory in this condition was just about what it was in his normal consciousness. But it was made clear by the subject matter of his statements in both states how he drew, in the hypnotic state, upon his experience and memory for the data dramatized so graphically in the hypnotic condition. The reader can see this by comparing what was said in hypnosis and what was said in the normal state. I do not need to recapitulate the incidents to show that fact.

One of the most interesting psychological characteristics of the experiments was the spiritistic casting manifest in the case. There were apparent quite distinct apparitions of the various persons concerned. Sometimes they were suggested and sometimes they were spontaneous productions. But the spiritistic dramatization was very striking. In one instance it took an unusual and striking form. Michael's father had died of a cancer in the face. When his father appeared it was strange to note that Michael remarked that his father's face had healed and that he looked "so natural." There was no reason for this form of the hallucination in his memory. But I was able to determine the real character of this dramatization, I think, by trying the experiment of calling up persons whom he had never known. The results in these attempts speak for themselves. Suffice it to say that no sustained hallucination of this sort seemed possible. The subliminal resorted to shifty excuses for its inability to find any person except those whom Michael had known in life. He could see and recognize any one he had known, but nothing could be accomplished with any one else. The subliminal was clearly aware of the poverty of its resources in this respect. Possibly the best way to speak of this, however, is to say that only past definite sensory experiences are easily reproducible in the form of hallucinations, and if this be the

right way to speak of the matter we may see the influence of automatism in the result. But this question aside as irrelevant to the present problem, we have a definite limitation of the subject's spiritistic dramatization in the inability to represent any other than remembered personalities. Consistent with this also was the fact that the name and incidents were mainly those of the subject's memory or acquaintance.

The same remark applies to the phenomena of apparent clairvoyance. The subject represented himself as seeing persons and things about his home and locality. There seemed to be definite hallucinations connected with them. Thus seeing Mr. Howe carrying a lantern to the barn, seeing Mrs. Jewett reading the paper by the table, seeing Mr. Jewett in a large building reading a book, etc.—all these have the *vraisemblance* of clairvoyant visions, and represented events that undoubtedly took place sometime with the persons concerned and witnessed by Michael himself, except the incident attributed to Prof. Jewett, which was fabricated out of the knowledge that he is connected with an educational institution. Mr. Howe lives at the Jewetts, who are dairy farmers, so that we can easily see the source of the allusion to his carrying a lantern. But I tested the veridical nature of the cases by various experiments, attempting clairvoyance at short range. The experiments with a pencil, books and other objects showed that he could not tell what objects were just before his eyes. The record indicates this.

The experiments in the mensuration of time have no such importance as those by Dr. Milne Bramwell and I do not call attention to them for proving any large hypothesis. It had not been a part of the original plan to experiment in this direction and hence they were undertaken only as incidental to the main purpose. They were sufficiently numerous and successful to make them suggestive as well as corroborative of previous experiments of the same kind by others, and are certainly not to be cast aside as worthless. Had I intended to test the matter more thoroughly I should have taken the clock out of the room as a possible source of hyperaesthetic knowledge. But the small place that the

clock could have taken in the result, even under hyperaesthesia, was remarked earlier when I called attention to the character of the clock whose ticking is unusually light and can be heard often only by putting the ear up to it and under favorable quiet not more than eight or ten feet away. A still better indication of the doubt that may attach to the supposition of counting the ticks, whether hyperaesthetic or not, is the fact that I engaged the man in conversation all the while that I waited for the fulfillment of the suggestion. We should have to suppose two independent acts of attention which is hardly a doctrine of orthodox psychology and subject to as much scepticism as the supernormal mensuration of time. It is not necessary to suppose that these facts prove the exceptional character of the phenomena, but only that they are not so easily explainable by normal methods as might be supposed at first sight. The attempt to do this involves us in suppositions which also require equal proof, and hence the result is that we have to leave such incidents unexplained. Scepticism of all theories is easier than any cut and dried or *a priori* explanation.

I may venture to summarize the case in the following manner, entertaining for the moment, at least, the following conjectures which would offer a perfectly natural explanation. All suppositions center about two primary ones in these hypotheses. The two primary assumptions are:

(1) That the dream never took place and that the papers were productions of Michael McCaffrey or some one in collusion with him.

(2) That the papers were genuine, simply as documents, and that they had been buried near the stump by some member of the family and afterwards found there by Michael under such circumstances as we may choose to believe.

The secondary assumptions involved in the latter hypothesis are that the papers had been the property of some of the McCaffreys, obtained perhaps by unfair means from the pockets of Tom. Higgey and buried in a fit of penitence under circumstances which might have led to their discovery in a somnambule dream reproducing a memory of something

once seen but not recognized at the time of its recurrence to the normal consciousness.

In regard to the first supposition, namely, that the dream never took place, I think we can safely say that the evidence is overwhelmingly in favor of its occurrence and that there is really nothing of weight to controvert its actual occurrence. The evidence of all the family and their ridiculing Michael before the digging are not explicable on any other supposition except a shrewd conspiracy on their part to support his statement, and I think any one who took the pains to interrogate them would not wish to entertain the supposition that any such shrewdness existed there. Also to decide this matter it occurred to me that I might interrogate the two men who were said to have been asked to witness the digging, whether they had been told of the dream before the digging. These were Mr. Egbert Southworth and Mr. Joseph Labarge.* Both answer affirmatively, and one of them remembers the details of the dream. Both also vouch for the honesty and trustworthiness of Michael McCaffrey. I myself can sustain this verdict regarding the man's honesty. He impressed me as one of the most naive and sincere men I ever met, and the same impression prevailed with all who met him at my house. There is no reason, therefore, to suppose that the dream did not occur. It seems to me to have been an unquestioned and unquestionable fact. The whole conduct of Michael and his family is inexplicable on any other hypothesis, and I imagine that no one would be tempted to question its occurrence except as a means of escaping a belief in the supernatural and so of throwing upon

* There was a little ambiguity about Mr. Southworth's statements regarding the time when he was told of the dream. In a letter of June 16th, 1906, Mr. Southworth wrote me that Michael had told him of the dream when asking him to be present at the digging and before this event came to pass. In a letter of Prof. Jewett's to me of August 9th, 1906, in which he answers a question of mine sent to him the previous June, Prof. Jewett says that Mr. Southworth seemed to remember only that Michael McCaffrey had said something important would occur then. As a consequence, on March 27th, 1907, I wrote to Mr. Southworth again and called his attention to Prof. Jewett's impression and Mr. Southworth's reply, dated March 29th, is that "McCaffrey told him of the dream when he asked him to come and see him dig for the papers."

the believer of this the responsibility for furnishing better evidence for the claim of its occurrence.

With a view of testing the amount of evidence for the occurrence of the dream and the knowledge of it previous to the digging I made inquiry of several parties since this report was written. I wrote first to Prof. Jewett, asking what he would say to the theory that the whole affair was a fabrication by Michael McCaffrey. The following is his reply.

Fredonia, N. Y., June 12th, 1906.

My dear Hyslop:

As bearing against the claim that the whole McCaffrey case was a fabrication, perhaps the strongest fact is that a number of weeks before the digging Michael had made an appointment with two of the most reliable men in the vicinity to be present with him at that time. Upon this point there can be *no* doubt. I talked the matter all over with one of these men afterwards. This man simply forgot the appointment. I think the other one was out of the place at the time. As these men did not come Michael dug with only members of the family as witnesses.

Now these appointments may not be accepted everywhere as sufficient proof upon the point raised. They show, however, that if the case were fraudulent the papers had been put in their place quite a long time before; else the character of the ground would have shown the fraud. The stump near which the papers were found was in a field that had been plowed—that I believe had been frequently plowed—but the place where the papers were found was not out in the plowed area. It was up among the large roots where the ground would not be frequently or much disturbed.

I am writing, of course, from memory, and this digging occurred nineteen years ago some time next month. But my memory of the occasion seems to be pretty clear. I visited the place the next day and examined it very carefully. The hole had not been filled in at all after the digging. I examined the surrounding surface, the walls of the hole from top to bottom, and the earth at the bottom for some six

inches further down than Michael had dug. Every indication seemed to be consistent with Michael's story.

Sincerely yours,

F. N. JEWETT.

I wrote also to the two brothers who were said to have been witnesses of the digging. Their replies confirm the story in all its essential particulars. The younger states that he remembers being present on the occasion of the digging; that he remembers the dream; that he was seven years of age at the time, but that he does not remember the condition of the ground. The elder of the two writes at more length. I give a copy of his letter.

North Bangor, N. Y., June 19th, 1906.

Mr. James H. Hyslop,

My dear Sir:—I will do the best I can in regard to your questions. 1st, I was not present at the moment he dug the papers, but on being called by Michael I went down where he was and examined the paper that the bottle contained. 2nd, the dream as near as I can recollect was as follows:

In his dream he saw a British soldier in uniform and he told Mike to dig by the side of this pine stump and he would find something that would make him rich, and to get two persons to go and help dig, or be present with him at least. But this he failed to do. Their names were Egbert Southworth and Joseph Labarge, both citizens living here at the time. But Labarge has since removed.

I was born in 1872 and I think it was the summer preceding the presidential election of Harrison and Morton (that the dream occurred). But I am not positive. But Michael I presume can give the facts better than I.

The ground is sandy, I think a mixture of muck and white sand to a depth of ten or fifteen inches or thereabouts, and then hard pan and then sand, as near as I can remember. He used a crowbar, I think, which broke the bottle at the top.

This is about all I know in regard to finding the papers, and this from my memory as best I can recollect.

Very truly,

JAMES McCAFFREY.

The facts also make it extremely doubtful that the papers were fabrications or forgeries by Michael, or of any one in collusion with him. We were not able to find that any one else was interested in them in any way. Michael had no temptations to sell them and it seems that he would not have done so, according to the statements of Prof. Jewett. That the papers were not genuine certificates on the Bank of England does not prove that Michael was responsible for their character, tho it does prove, or at least tend to prove, that some one had forged them. It was apparent to all that the papers were very old and the bottle shows signs of great age, while the various circumstances connected with the writing, the dates of the papers, etc., make it absurd to suppose that any rational being would resort to that kind of work for establishing their value. It is quite possible that the person who buried the papers, assuming that they had been buried there, had thought them of great value, but had himself been the victim of a fraud. But it is not probable that Michael had any part in producing the papers or giving them the form which they possess.

An important incident seems to lend strong support to the claims respecting the digging and finding of the papers. I took the broken fragments of the bottle to a gentleman who is an expert in the employment of the Tiffanys in New York City on antiquities generally. I refrained from saying a word about the history of the bottle, and asked him to examine it and pass judgment upon its age, as far as such a judgment was possible without such knowledge. The gentleman at once said, on looking at it, that it was seventeenth century glass and gave as his reasons for it: (1) that it was hand-made glass and made before machinery for this purpose was in use, and explained that a mallet had been used to put it into shape, pointing out the little rough places on it in support of this; and (2) that the iridescence which showed itself slightly in the glass was an evidence of its age. He had seen similar glass in old houses in Boston where its age was known. On the character of the glass the gentleman's judgment was very positive, and on his pointing it out the iridescence was apparent to me, tho I should not have spon-

taneously detected it. But the evidence of hammering on the glass is perfectly apparent to any one.

He asked to see the papers said to have been found by Mr. McCaffrey. I showed them to him and he at once pronounced judgment, after examination by a microscope, that the piece said to have been found between the stones was made of rags and possibly dated back as early as 1750. He had seen paper like it made before the American Revolution. The paper found in the bottle he said was a different kind and was altogether later than the other piece. The paper found in the bottle was in a better state of preservation than that found between the stones.

This gentleman also recommended that I see another whose business was with old autographs and which made him more or less acquainted with old paper. I went to this gentleman and without telling him a word of the origin of the papers or of their history I showed them to him in the reverse order of that which I had followed in the case of Mr. Tiffany's agent. I showed him first the paper said to have been found in the bottle. He said it was not old. When asked to say how old he thought it he said it was about forty years. He said it was machine made paper and showed evidence of having been artificially soiled. The evidence of acid on it was apparent to a mere novice in such things. I then showed him the paper said to have been found between the stones. He said this was not more than twenty years old. He dissented strongly from the opinion that the paper could have been as old as 1750, after I told him the history of it.

It is noticeable that he gave an opinion the reverse of Tiffany's agent, who thought the paper found in the bottle was the younger of the two. But the interesting point in his opinion is that the paper which he said was not more than twenty years old had been in the possession of Prof. Jewett twenty years ago and showed perfectly evident marks then of being old, the writing on it being wholly illegible, and even the lines in some cases destroyed. The paper in the bottle, of course, had a chance for preservation which the other did not have, and so the difference assigned by the first gentle-

man
cou
The
safe
afte
som
stan
thei
his
the
gen
all
wer
drec
is c
whi
wou
tho
age
The
and
to l
how
Mic
of
affo
Ton
fath
visi
But
bur
fath
not
no
mar
so
oth
the

man might have been affected by this fact. It is possible, of course, that the two papers had their origin at different times. The man who forged them may have found that he could safely perpetrate a second forgery of the same kind some time after disposing of the first, and played a second trick upon some poor fellow who thought it had value in the first instance. But it is certain that the second man's judgment of their age is not worth much. It may have been affected by his experience with old linen papers, and it is certain that these papers found by the pine stump were not linen. The gentleman showed me a lot of his old autographs in letters all of which were on linen and unlined paper. Many of them were one hundred and twenty-five years old, some one hundred and fifty. But whatever apology exists for his error it is certain that his opinion on it is worthless, a judgment which it is unfortunate we cannot respect more, because it would coincide with the evident forgery of the certificates, tho the possible age of the bottle favors, without proving, the age of the paper.

Two things, then, I think can be taken for granted. (1) The fact that Michael had a dream about digging for papers, and (2) that the papers are genuine so far as their relation to Michael is concerned. But there still remains to explain how the papers got where they were found and what caused Michael's dream. The question of foul play, while a number of circumstances create a suspicion of it, by no means afford any proof of this. Besides whatever foul play with Tom Higgey is suspected has to be referred to the grandfather, and not to Michael's father. The grandfather had visited this country, it seems, according to the narrative. But we can find no rational links to connect him with the burying of the papers there without also connecting the father with it, and the evidence that the father knew of it is not good enough to treat the matter seriously. First we have no evidence that the grandfather got anything from the dead man's pocket, unless we suppose it was some tobacco. But so far as the reference to tobacco goes it would imply that others got some of this. We should have to suppose that the certificates were taken and the tobacco left until others

were present, all of which might be true, tho there is no evidence proving it. There is also no satisfactory grounds to believe that this Tom Higgy had anything valuable about his person. All seem to agree that he was extremely poor and disheartened. The story of his showing and quickly concealing a handkerchief has no importance. If it were quoted in favor of the genuineness of the phenomena the sceptic would very quickly discredit its nature, and it has no more value in proving Higgy's possession of the papers than the vague kind of stories that always rise and grow under similar circumstances, especially when we have ignorant people concerned with it. Whatever the possibilities in the matter the fact has no evidential importance. Then, besides the want of evidence that the grandfather found such papers, we have his separation from this country and the burying place of the papers. Apparently the son, Michael's father, knew nothing about it, and it shows no rational features to have buried the papers in this country, apparently before the McCaffreys got this land, where the family would have no interest in the accidental finding of it. The whole theory in this respect seems to break down. I do not question the *a priori* possibility of this source of the papers and their burial, but it is because we have no means of disproving the supposition beyond the power of cavil that we have to entertain its possibility. But the man who holds this opinion is as much without evidence of any value as the man who insists that the grandfather could not have done this.

On the whole, then, the facts seem not to make any positive conclusion either way about the origin of the papers a possible matter. Many circumstances point forcibly to the genuineness of the finding of the papers; that is, to the fact that Michael found them as reported, and that a premonitory dream led to their discovery. This view is consistent with any theory whatever regarding the origin of the papers and their mode of concealment in the place. On the other hand, the impossibility of proving either the innocence or the guilt of the immediate relatives in the family regarding the burial of the papers prevents us from determining any conditions that might lead us to suppose that the dream involved super-

normal knowledge. Conclusions on either side of the matter are extremely elusive and the most that we can do is to say that a verdict of non-proven has to be made in regard to any hypothesis whatever in reference to the case. The most that we can believe is that the dream took place and that the papers were found in consequence of it. But interesting as it is, we have no proof of clairvoyance or spiritistic agencies in the phenomena. The whole incident is a remarkable one. I think we can concede this regardless of the possible explanations, and if we assume no more than its remarkable elusiveness. But it seems to be remarkable for more than this feature. There is much to support the belief that it was supernormal, tho it wants the characteristics that would make it evidential. It would be stronger, of course, were it not for the circumstances that enable the sceptic to suspect actions in connection with the matter that are doubtful enough in their character to raise a suspicion regarding the whole phenomenon. It is precisely this that must make the intelligent man pause when asked to consider the supernormal in it. But the various suppositions necessary to make a complete whole of it as a fraudulent production are less supported than is necessary to make them more than *a priori* possibilities. Hence the strength of the evidence for the occurrence of the dream and the apparently supernormal knowledge conveyed by it is such as to divest an *a priori* possibility of much of its cogency. We are left, therefore, without any final conclusion as clear as may be desirable. It is simply a phenomenon which required a most complete investigation at the time of its occurrence, and when such occurs again it may be possible to investigate it more effectively.

The experiments with hypnosis tend to show the genuineness of the original phenomena, and certainly indicate the impression which the man's experience made on his mind. There was a naive revelation of facts which the man would not have told naturally, and this was indicated very clearly by his embarrassment when he came out of the induced sleep. Any one familiar with such phenomena will see in them circumstances favoring the truthfulness of the story

about the dream and the finding of the papers, even tho they do not prove the supernormal character of the information. They are strong evidence of the man's honesty, and it would only remain to show good reason to believe that the man never had any normal knowledge of the burying of the papers to make the dream a supernormal one. But satisfactory proof evades us at every point, and the whole case has to be left in the same uncertainty as many other instances, until other proof of the supernormal has been obtained, when it might seem easily explicable by hypotheses which we would not entertain on such evidence as this instance presents.

rep
tele
into
yon
on s
inte
reco
by t
whi
occu
alle
ther
susp
the
with
sinc
que
stit
Hen
less
all t
den
I
alle
gate
phen
cept
sour
poss
sim

A CASE OF THE ALLEGED MOVEMENT OF PHYSICAL OBJECTS WITHOUT CONTACT.

By James H. Hyslop and Hereward Carrington.

INTRODUCTION.

The present report has its interest in the fact that it represents an investigation and negative result of claims to telekinesis before the accounts of the phenomena had got into print and before the subjects and reporters had got beyond the pale of inquiry. There is a mass of literature on similar phenomena which seem inexplicable, assuming the intelligence and honesty of the reporters, but usually the records made and published were not subject to any revision by trained observers. We recall one instance of this in a book which reported some of the incidents of the phenomena that occurred in the Phelps family. While many of the things alleged were easily explicable by the most ordinary frauds, there were certain others which did not seem to yield to this suspicion, tho they might have been explicable by illusion on the part of the observer. But as the persons who were the witnesses or alleged witnesses of these phenomena have long since been deceased, there is no opportunity even to cross-question them, and much less is there any opportunity to institute direct examination of the reported phenomena. Hence one cannot but read the records with complete helplessness when called on to give an intelligent explanation of all the alleged phenomena and at the same time supply evidence that the hypothesis is correct.

For this reason it is always important to obtain a case of alleged movement of physical objects that one can investigate while they are occurring, so that the character of the phenomena will not depend on inexperienced testimony for its acceptance. Mal-observation and illusion are such fruitful sources of error that only those who are acquainted with the possibilities of them and of the frauds that so frequently simulate the "supernatural" can be trusted to give such an

account of these phenomena as can be respected. It is true that reports of these apparently inexplicable phenomena have been made in all ages and in all conditions of civilization, and, if careful observation had made their possibility more plausible, present allegations of their existence might be received, if not with more credence, certainly with more patience. But, unfortunately for the believers of them, the constant dissipation of claims to their occurrence at the present time throws discredit on the imperfectly reported accounts of the past, and each new instance of physical phenomena alleged comes handicapped with an increasing prejudice against it. The duty to careful inquiry becomes proportionately more imperative; and it is for this reason (not necessarily because of any likely hope of finding what is alleged, but because of men's habits when once the old boundaries of belief have been transgressed, as they have been in the phenomena of telepathy and alleged genuine mediumship) that we must be doubly cautious in accepting the facts.

The duties of psychic research have often been misunderstood by its most scientific devotees. They often think that they have the privilege of unrestrained *a priori* hypotheses on the side of scepticism when they will allow none of these on the side of belief. They are very strict in their demands for evidence when they are asked to accept the hypothesis of spiritualistic believers, but they are quite careful, often, not to supply adequate evidence for their own theories. That is, they construe their task as one solely to receive and judge evidence affecting the claims of the supernormal, and do not accept a corresponding duty to receive and judge evidence regarding ordinary hypotheses which they choose to indulge instead of admitting the supernormal. Of course we have a right to decide our policy on such matters, and if we are concerned only with scientific evidence, of claims extending beyond the natural or ordinary, we may not be called to support hypotheses of a natural sort by evidence of their truth. But the moment that we set up to be scientific in our methods we assume the obligation to offer evidence for either side of a controverted theory that we discuss, or for any position which we suppose or assert. The problem is

not
nary
we
deen
plan
well
Wha
a fac
supp
are t
as in
the
usual
enou
In
their
which
we a
physi
learn
direct
laws.
may
not a
less t
which
ence
dential
that
formi
again
them.
challe
produ
mensu
wise
standa
natura
Th

not merely to convince ourselves of something beyond ordinary phenomena, but to scientifically sustain any contention we may choose to make. For that reason we have never deemed it sufficient to assert that any particular natural explanation of an apparent mystery was possible. That might well be admitted in any case. But the scientific question is: What evidence have we to show that the alleged possibility is a *fact*. Any one can conjecture possibilities. But fewer can support a belief in their hypotheses with evidence that they are true. The duty to supply evidence on demand is quite as imperative for the believer in natural explanations as for the believer in the supernormal. It only happens that usually the believer in the "supernatural" is not intelligent enough to assert his rights in the controversy.

In many cases, however, it is useless for them to assert their rights, because they know too little of the conditions which affect the scepticism of which they complain. When we are asked to believe in the existence of the movement of physical objects without contact, the ready believer must learn that he is asking us to accept alleged facts which directly contravene all that we normally know of physical laws. These physical laws may not be ultimate and there may be little known as to their limitations. But we cannot accept these residual facts—alleged residual facts—unless the evidence for them is proportioned to the relation which they sustain to our ordinary experience. This experience is so uniform as to constitute a strong claim to evidential value in opposition to asserted miracles. It is true that consistency is not the final test of truth, that is, conformity to experience is not so fixed and final a security against new phenomena as to preclude the discovery of them. But any allegation of that discovery must accept the challenge which normal experience presents and so must produce evidence both qualitatively and quantitatively commensurate with the magnitude of the claims made. Otherwise normal experience will represent the only rational standard of belief for the occasion, as it is for all the most natural events of life.

This, as well as general logical rules, is the justification

for placing the burden of proof on the man who asserts the existence of phenomena that contradict or appear to contradict the known laws of physical action. Every narrative of such incidents must be subjected to that analysis and criticism which our natural experience demands. If the matter were one of indiscriminating and uncritical testimony, involving nothing but the honesty of the reporter the problem would be simple enough. The sincerity and normal truthfulness of witnesses would be sufficient. But the fact is that these are very small items in the basis of conviction. The intelligent judgment of witnesses is a thousandfold more important than their honesty, and besides this intelligent judgment, which must be the product of scientific and critical habits, there must be the power and habit of discriminating between the actual facts of observation and the inferred or hypothetical facts which are so often mistaken for those that are observed. Unless this method can be adopted one's reported observations can be referred simply to the imagination.

We have made these general and truistic remarks—truistic for the scientific man—because we think the present case of alleged telekinesis affords a good illustration of all the factors which make for conviction and illusion in the general reader. In studying the report we have not been in the least influenced by the *a priori* improbability or impossibility of the phenomena, which are apparent enough to the scientific man, but by the conditions which have been so conducive to the acceptance of such stories in the past. It is quite apparent to intelligent people that an impossible strain is imposed on our credulity by many of the incidents in the account which is here published. But whatever scepticism we entertain is determined entirely by the previous experience of intelligent men in regard to the laws of physical action. In an evidential problem requiring them to believe that these laws have been set aside, they have the right to demand much better evidence than we find here that they have been so contradicted. But if asked for other evidence themselves than the *a priori* presumptions from experience that an ordinary hypothesis is the true one, they often have nothing but this *a priori* belief to cherish in their support, and they are so

often out of touch with the public mind and so unwilling to educate it in intelligent methods that they are exposed to as much criticism as if they were credulous.

In the present case what struck us, in spite of the perfectly obtrusive weaknesses of the testimony on the part of Mr. X., was the existence of qualities in the report which would have made the phenomena puzzling to a future generation, if it had nothing to rely on but the honesty and apparent intelligence of the reporter. There is a fair amount of intelligence shown by Mr. X. in his account, in spite of most definite evidence of credulity. The fundamental weakness of his account is the failure to discriminate between his theory of the phenomena and the actual facts of observation. This any reader will observe. But when we consider that his statements are supported by the testimony of other persons we have to face the very simple explanation of trickery and lying on the part of some one interested in deceiving Mr. X. Such it turned out to be; so that, while the testimony is collective, it yielded to the briefest inquiry, and what might have been an interesting story to another generation which had no means of interrogating the witnesses turns out to be the simplest kind of a fraud.

The circumstance that protects the majority of sceptics in such phenomena is their previous knowledge of physical laws and their immediate recognition of the fact that such phenomena contradict all that they have been accustomed to suppose inviolable. Their difficulty in accepting events will be proportioned to their confidence in the "laws of nature." Many people, however, have no "prejudices" against the facts on the ground of their contravening experience. They are prepared to admit anything whatever. Two influences have brought this about, perhaps three. (1) The survival of the belief in the miraculous; (2) Ignorance in regard to the relation of such alleged phenomena to established physical law; and (3) The influence of modern physical discovery in physical forces of a supersensible sort which has removed the old land-marks of the material world and prepared many minds to admit the possibility of anything. Sceptics must reckon with this situation when ap-

proaching the disposition of the public to believe such things. The long standing criteria of belief have been modified and often the sceptic himself has not progressed sufficiently to realize this or to estimate the psychological processes which tend to weaken his old measure of human knowledge. On the special point involved in telekinesis he may know that his criterion is still intact, but this does not affect the movable standard of the majority with the effect of that flexibility of standards generally of which this majority has become conscious. The consequence is that phenomena of this sort receive credence which would not have influenced ordinary minds a generation ago, and only psychical researchers have provided for themselves a definite and empirical limitation to believable incidents of the kind.

The fact that we can suspect the existence of the "naughty boy" in such instances as are here reported is not a scientific verdict on them. That may be a *a priori* excuse for not paying any attention to allegations, but it is neither an adequate excuse for a scientific man to make nor is it a policy that can afford to neglect the scientific duty to adduce proper evidence in its support. This has been the view of the present case which has appealed to us. It was clear enough to one who is acquainted with the historical instances of the kind that mal-observation was probable on the part of the reporter. But this *a priori* judgment or suspicion is not sufficient for a body pretending to be scientific. The case is one the report of which, superficially at least, and without the knowledge of previous similar instances, would impress many a reader with its reality, especially if he did not know the criteria to use in judging it. That fact is the primary justification for investigating and publishing it. The result will show the discrepancy in a concrete form between the observations of untrained persons and those of scientifically trained men. The time will come when it will not be necessary to publish such instances in a detailed manner, but only to indicate the results of inquiry. At present, however, our scientific object can be satisfied only by the most minute and patient treatment of matter which, to the average man of the world and the scientist alike, may not seem worth while. We

have to establish an empirical criterion for estimating reports on such phenomena, and this criterion is simply one which represents the results of actual investigation instead of *a priori* conjectures about "naughty boys," which may be probable or plausible enough but are not proved by the making of them. It is not enough to say "non-proven" in such instances. We must accept the facts or prove the opposite. If we were merely a body of persons sitting in judgment on evidence as presented and throwing the whole responsibility for the case on the reporter, we could well afford to stand on our dignity and insist on having better evidence. But we pretend ourselves to be interested in investigating claims of the kind, and this fact imposes an obligation to examine a case as well as estimate the testimony of others. We are not merely critics of other's evidence; we are supposed to be judges of the facts, and must show a verdict on one side or the other, as well as pass judgment on the evidence as reported.

With this explanation of the case we think we may leave the reports and results to readers.

Mr. X's Reports.

The first letter which Mr. X. sent to us apprising us of the phenomena which had attracted his attention, contained no description of them and is omitted from the account. It was a sufficiently intelligent story to elicit an immediate reply from me asking for details, which the letter below supplies. We make no comment on the contents of the letter which we publish as each reader may judge of its strength or weakness according to his knowledge of such narratives. The meaning and importance of the other letters will be explained in their proper place. They were all in response to certain inquiries which we made preliminary to the decision to investigate.

Windsor, N. S., Oct. 9th, 1906.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,

Secretary Society American Institute for Scientific Research, New York.

My Dear Sir:—I received yours of Oct. 1st, and would

have replied to it before, but have not been well. I think the phenomena occurring here should be investigated without delay. Various strange things have been happening here, for months. Light, and even very heavy articles have been moved quite a distance without contact, in various stores of this town in daylight. The last of March, I saw the headless figure of a man, in the cellar of one of those stores. The groans of the figure were very distressing. I am convinced there was no trickery. Since then, I understand from what I consider reliable authority, the same figure has been seen in daylight several times in the same cellar. I believe also, that before I saw the figure, it was seen in the cellar of the adjoining store by the merchant who occupies it. The figure, which is that of a man, is persistent in attempting to be recognized, and to have communication with me, chiefly, personally. Since that appearance, seen by me in the cellar, the same spirit has materialized in a bag, about 2 P. M., in the adjoining store, the bag tied up, in which no boy, or any human being could live. This was within a month. About a fortnight ago, I bought two empty boxes from a store close to my residence. In crossing the street to come on my land, the two young men bringing the boxes on a hand cart, noticed that their load was becoming heavier, and when they came opposite my yard, and attempted to lift one of the boxes off the cart. It was as much as they could lift. I suspected at once what the matter was. They dropped the box without carrying it as far as I desired them. I heard the same sounds to a limited extent I had heard in the cellar referred to in March. On first seeing him in March, I was convinced of the identity of the apparition. It is not necessary probably to enter upon that subject now. The cover of the box was nailed down in different places, as in the case when clerks take goods out of a box, and then nail the pieces of the cover on again. I could not get one of the young men about the box (and before the manifestation ceased there were five of them), to open it, though I fetched an axe out of my shed for that purpose. They were all frightened to do so. I tried to get a woman who was standing in her kitchen door, who resided for years in the place where this man in the box

lived during his earth life, and had known him from his earliest childhood, only a few yards from the box, to come to it and speak to him, as she would know his voice and could identify him, but she was like the young men, frightened, and would not budge. I went to the adjacent street, and tried for some one to open the box. When I secured a person and came back with him, and got a piece of the cover taken off, the body had disappeared. The materialization must have continued ten minutes, which, as it was in a box, which admitted some light through cracks, and accomplished on a bright sunny day a few minutes after nine o'clock in the morning, was an extraordinary exhibition of power over difficulties hard to overcome. The persons around the box during my brief absence from it, heard words proceeding from it, indicating the identity of the person in it. One of the young men who knew the person in life, told me he recognized his voice. The woman previously referred to, while I was absent came nearer the box, and heard the groaning noises, saw the box move, heard the knocks in it, and told me the voice sounded like the person I believe it is. I was told by one of the young men subsequently, that while I was away from the box, two of the young men upended it, that of course tended to break up the loosely cohering body the spirit had. If I had been present, I would not have let them move the box in that way. They are entirely ignorant of Psychic Phenomena. I believe if I had opened the box immediately, the form could have been taken with a camera, if everything had been ready for that purpose. Of course, this most unusual Materialization took me by surprise, but it will make me more alive to the necessity of immediate action another time, when such a thing occurs on my premises, which I have some reason to believe, will be the case. There are several spirits operating, principally in Water Street, in this town, but also in other parts of the town. I am convinced that disembodied beings are at the back of the varied physical manifestations here, and I am sure the intelligent and unprejudiced investigator will be convinced that this is the case, upon personally looking into the matter on the spot. In the cellars of different establishments, an indistinct white

shape has been seen several times. I do not think this is the same man I have been writing about, it may be, but I am inclined to believe that it is another person who led a bad life and ended tragically. The throwing of articles in shops, and on streets, has been of almost daily occurrence, of course I mean without any visible cause for their movements. I am seriously handicapped here by not having a man to assist me in these investigations. The citizens are either frightened to aid me, or scoff at the possibility of such manifestations. The greatest blow to sceptics everywhere, and the greatest triumph possible for those who believe and know such things are possible, and do happen, would be for me to secure a photograph of this spirit; there were marks upon his face which would cause him to be recognized by everybody who has known him, and the circumstances of his death were terrible in the extreme. But I cannot very well or with prospect of success, take the cover off a box, or upturn a hogshead, and take the photo of the materialized spirit, if, as I think, he will materialize again in one or other of these, as you know the photo will have to be taken with the utmost quickness, as this spirit seems able to materialize in the early morning of bright days. His photo could have been taken on the floor of the store when they pulled the bag off him, as he lasted long enough, gradually melting away. The great difficulty is I have never used a camera, though I have a little one. I could learn, I suppose, but I would run a great risk from my want of knowledge, and would not get a satisfactory photo., and besides, I am the one here to open the box, or tip up the hogshead, as the people here are a scared lot when it comes to action in such things. Those managing this particular manifestation, have settled it apparently, to have it next on my land, for a woman on Saturday morning saw the box move and heard knocks in it. As I keep poultry, she thought I had some hens in the box. This occurred a little after 9 A. M. On Sunday last, during a gale of wind, a hogshead, in a small yard enclosed on both sides, was driven out of the alley, on to the lane, leading out to Water Street. It turned at the sidewalk, no one near it, crossed the street in almost a straight line, passed over the curb of the opposite sidewalk,

turned a second time in the direction of my property, on Water Street, rolled along the sidewalk, about 75 feet, and then turned again off the sidewalk on to my property. The proprietor of the hogshead was writing in his office, overlooking part of the little alley in which the hogshead was. He has informed me that no person started the hogshead, and that no one guided it on the sidewalk, for he had gone out of the front door of his shop, to look after it. He went over to my land and carried it up near the line of my land on Water Street, and turned it bottom up and left it there. I think if he had left it alone it would have come down the right of way on my premises, to the front of my house outside the yard. The alley up which it came, is about 50 feet to the street, it is about 60 feet across the street to the opposite sidewalk. The three turnings of the hogshead and the course it took, could not be attributed to the wind, but denoted an intelligent operator behind the scenes. The hogshead is a very large one, belonging to a merchant in the crockery business. This movement of it took place about 4 P. M. I have gathered these particulars from the merchant owning the hogshead principally, whom I regard as a reliable man, and from other sources. A boy, on the evening of the 8th inst., moved the hogshead from the front of my premises and was rolling it in the rear of my house, designing to break it up for kindling, when I stopped him. His mother lives next to me. I told him it was not his, and he had no business to take it. I then rolled it a few feet to the immediate rear of my house, on a vacant lot. Next morning I found two articles on the hogshead, which I, from previous experience, have come to regard as a sign that the man who had materialized in the box, was about. That evening, the evening of the 9th inst., about 7:15, I met the owner of the hogshead, and told him I had preserved it from a boy and if he wanted it, he had better come and take it away. I told him he had better take it out by Stannus Street, as it would be handier for him. He went away immediately, alone, to get it. Stannus Street is a street running out of Water Street a short distance from the rear of my house. This morning I felt I had been hasty in getting the merchant to

take the hogshead back, that the articles left on it indicated probably that the spirit desired to use it for the purpose of materializing instead of the box, so I went to the owner and purchased the hogshead from him this morning, and he readily parted with it, seemed glad to get rid of it, and told me he had great difficulty in getting it off the vacant lot on to Stannus Street, it turned round and round. There was no one with him in the body. Finally it tumbled into an old cellar, which was not boarded over, one of the relics of the great fire, which destroyed the town, in Oct. 1897. A working man came along and helped him to get the hogshead out of the cellar. If the spirit is aiding me in getting photographed, the hogshead can easily be tipped over, off the materialized body, without the loss of time necessarily entailed in taking the cover off the box. If I can succeed in taking this man's photo., it will make a great sensation all over the world, for such a thing never has been accomplished, since the advent of the camera under similar circumstances. I am aware that Sir W. Crooks took Katie King by Magnesium light in his own house, but no one knew the real identity of the spirit, there was only her word for it, but this man was well known and his photo. can be readily recognized. I tried to get his photo. from a Montreal paper, shortly after his decease, but was informed by his widow and friends that no photo. of him was in existence. That fact will cut away the reckless assertions of some unbelievers, in case his photo. can now be taken. This man's photo., if taken, will be taken in broad daylight, and under circumstances, therefore, calculated to produce a good likeness of him as he looked at the time of his death. He was a man of invincible courage and of an iron will, which probably accounts for the wonderful manner in which he has been able to materialize in the light, at any rate in the case of the box, and to retain his temporary body for several seconds on the floor of the shop. As the box was not opened immediately, it cannot be determined with certainty how long his form would have lasted in the bright light of that sunny morning. There have been many manifestations of the movement of articles, even today, but I

must not trespass further on your patience. I was told yesterday by a boy whom I believe was telling the truth, that he had that morning seen in the same cellar, the headless figure I had seen in March. I think you should investigate the phenomena here with as little delay as possible. They appear to be increasing in strength, and are spread over quite an area, and seem now to be taking place not only in shops, but to a greater extent in the open air. Your scientific knowledge, your past investigations into occult matters, and your fearlessness, render you an ideal investigator. The physical manifestations in this town are consequent upon crimes committed for a period of upwards of two years past in this County of Hants, in which both the innocent and the guilty are participating. It is, in my opinion, the suddenness of the transition of these spirits, in the prime of youth and manhood, with only one exception, in the case of an old man, which gives them such control over matter. I never knew till these things occurred during the past few months, to which I have only briefly referred, that there were so many unconscious physical mediums among the young men and boys of this town.

Oct. 12th. I must bring this long letter to a close, but before doing so, I must give you my latest experience, which occurred yesterday afternoon. I had gone down to see if the hogshead which I had not moved from the merchant's premises was still there, as since the merchant had taken it from two reliable persons, I had heard of its being in other places not far from my land. It was there. There was a pounding in a shed near which it was, which occurred several times and was heard by the young man who was with me. The shed was locked, and I went all round it, and inspected it narrowly, to see if any one could have entered it, and made these sounds by trickery. There was no way of getting into the shed. Its locked door was continually under my observation. But a more extraordinary thing was to take place. Standing facing a little building entirely unoccupied, I saw apparently, the door slowly open and the figure of a man appear in the doorway. Then he went back into

the little building and the door slowly closed after him. If the door had really opened, it would have creaked, as it has not been opened for a long time. The garb of the figure was not such as any one in this town would possess, and the size and movements of the person enabled me to identify him, taking the form in connection with his clothes, as a man whom I frequently saw the last days of May, and who came to an ignominious end the first day of Aug. last, in this town. The young man was behind me and did not see the figure. Another young man came, and the two of them went and tried, at my request, the door of the old studio. It was locked. The phenomena, as you well know, is apt to be illusive, and neither I, nor any mortal here has any control over it, so I cannot guarantee results, but the manifestations are increasing in variety and power, and there are a good many witnesses to them besides myself, in this place, and it seeme extremely probable that they will increase, rather than diminish, in the immediate future, and that you will be amply repaid if you visit Windsor. Certainly in the whole world, there is not at present such a field for the psychic investigator, as this town affords. The apparition I saw yesterday was not that of the man who materialized in the bag and box. I am not a spiritualist, though I have been a student of occult matters, more or less for many years. What the spiritualists call their cause I consider to be nothing but a rope of sand. They seem unable to organize, and have practically accomplished nothing to lighten the burden of the wretchedness and poverty and vice of humanity, since the raps at Rochester started modern Spiritualism. They ignore or make too little of the sad condition of those they lightly term undeveloped spirits, and with few exceptions disbelieve in, and deny the dangers which often beset investigators. However, I must not dwell upon the many objections I have to Modern Spiritualism. I merely wish to indicate to you very briefly my position on the subject. If you desire to make of me any more inquiries, I shall be pleased briefly to answer them. In any event, if you decide on coming, write to me first, so I may have time to give you some

information, as to the manner for you to commence the investigations with the best prospects for success.

Very sincerely,

Windsor, Nova Scotia.

Windsor, N. S., November 14th, 1906.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,
519 West 149th Street, New York.

Dear Sir:—I received yours of 11th yesterday, and hasten to acknowledge its receipt. I am a very busy man, but these phenomena for the past few months have taken up more of my time than I could well spare. It has been going on continuously since I wrote to you, and is assuming a more astonishing phase in the appearance of forms in the daylight, in the presence, sometimes, of several witnesses. The telephone, even the central office, has been used to communicate with me and I have been unable on three separate occasions to trace the messages to any mortal source. Nowhere in the whole history of psychic phenomena have the manifestations been more open, widespread and continuous so far, as in this place. The captain of a barge, which was lying at one of our wharfs, was witness to some strange occurrences while here during two months. It would be interesting for you to call on this Captain, who is now in your city, address, Capt. E. E. H——, 51 South Street, New York City. I gave him your address and asked him to call upon you, but I presume he has not done so. There are more physical mediums here and unconscious of it, than in any other place, I think, of its size, in the world, which probably accounts largely, with the tragedies which have happened in the county and town, within the last few years, for the present outbreak of spirit manifestations. The citizens are frightened generally and when their business is likely to be affected by any reports of such phenomena, some of them take the short cut of lying out of it, so when you come, the matter will have to be approached with care, so that you may get the best results. You must bring a good Camera with you, one to take a snap

shot with. I will write again in a few days. In the meantime you might communicate with Mr. F. E. H. of this Town.

Yours sincerely,

I wrote to Mr. H. . . . in accordance with the request made, and he did not reply to me. The next letter of Mr. X. gives some explanation of this failure, but the sequel of the investigation will suggest a clear explanation to the reader.

Windsor, N. S., January 1st, 1907.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,

Dear Sir:—I received yours of 27th ult., on the evening of the 29th ult., Mr. H—— received your letter, and I regret this inexcusable delay in answering it. I have urged him to reply to it more than a dozen times, but he seems to be one of those men who procrastinates about every thing except their own immediate business. I will have to go to his house and stay with him till he writes a letter to you. It is too bad that there should be such delay in your coming, for the manifestations have affected more persons in a more varied and public manner, than I have ever read of in the whole history of physical phenomena, and I have been interested in such things for many years and have read numerous books and papers on the subject. A new phase, is the dropping of money on the floor of rooms and shops. In this way two young men in a closed room, picked up yesterday morning \$1.05, only a small boy in the room besides themselves. The money dropped on the floor out of the air. One 50c piece, two quarters, and 5 cents in cents. I have been present when cents have been thrown, almost always thrown near me. A man named D. C——, of Colchester County, is now in Windsor, and is interested in these things. He is going about with me a little tomorrow, and has promised to write to you at once about his experience. I think the invisibles are contemplating levitating one or more persons, the power here is so great, and there are so many unconscious physical mediums here, that I should not be surprised if one or more per-

sons should be levitated upon one of the principal buildings. There seems no cessation of the phenomena, it is more varied and has taken the form of controlling several young men and boys in the town, so that they have frequently had those delusions, common to the subjects of the hypnotizer.

Sincerely yours,

Windsor, N. S., January 16th, 1907.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,

Dear Sir:—I have to apologize for not replying to your letter to me before. Mr. X. is anxious to send by this mail to you something from me, and there is no time to give any particulars, only to say that there are certainly strange things happening in this town, differing from the ordinary events hitherto familiar to us, and which should be investigated by a competent investigator, like yourself, to determine their nature and origin.

Yours sincerely,

H————.

This letter of Mr. H———— is interesting enough as oracular in its statements, and when we understand that he was probably propitiating Mr. X. as a business man who wanted his custom we can appreciate the desire for ambiguity. He carefully refrained from describing what he mentions.

The next letter is from one of the persons who was also implicated in the production of the phenomena and is interesting in the light of the discoveries and confessions obtained by Mr. Carrington.

Windsor, N. S., January 16th, 1907.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,

Dear Sir:—I now enclose you statements from two persons, Miss M—— T——, and W. L——, and I have also sent you by this mail a letter from Mr. H——, which I prepared, as it was no use depending on his replying to you. There has been last week such extended and varied phenomena, that I had to spend a good deal of time making notes of it,

and Saturday and last Monday, I had to employ two stenographers, and typewriters, to write a very long letter to one of the managers of a very large store here, in my endeavor to shield and dissipate the dreadful spirit conditions in this store. Every male clerk in it and the two girl clerks are under control, and one of these girls is a very fine lady, and in face of the fool ignorance of this manager, I had to write this letter, which I will read to you when you come. I have been today to get the statements of three other persons to enclose to you now, but they would not sign them, not in any way denying the manifestations they had seen, but dreading publicity, though I assured them, that there would be none, and the two I procured were given on the agreement, that they should not be shown to any one here. They are originals, please very carefully preserve them, and H——'s. You have statements enough, however. It is impossible for me to write you any detailed statement now, I am so behind in my legal work. I, however, tomorrow will probably be able to get and forward to you the account of the foreign coins and money falling in a barber shop here. Please inform me when you intend to leave New York. I have just received your wire, at 3:45, and will at once reply to it. At 4 P. M. I wired you thus: "Situation promising, am mailing letter and statements, wait till received." The situation is very promising just now for the Psychical Researcher, but it is a very bad one for several young men and boys of the town, and for some of the young women.

Sincerely yours,

P. S.—I have been fighting a hard battle here alone.

Statements.

Windsor, N. S., January 16th, 1907.

During the last few months there have been a series of occurrences in my restaurant, on Gerrish Street, in this town, for which I am unable to find any explanation. They consisted mainly in moving things from my place, and generally throwing them on the floor, and it was impossible to at-

tribute these things to trickery or sport. Sometimes articles which did not belong in my restaurant and which I had never seen before, were thrown into it. There was also a very curious and unexplainable treatment of my stove, on one occasion.

W—— L——.

The next letter is similar to the last and represents testimony collected in response to my request, tho it is not by any one that was involved either in the trickery or confessions. It is one of the two letters mentioned in that of Mr. X.

Windsor, N. S., Jan. 16th, 1907.

I am a clerk in the grocery store of my uncle on Gerrish Street in this town. I have heard in this store during a recent period, knockings in its cellar, which I could not account for, and occasionally articles in the store would fall on the floor, without any apparent cause. I have heard sounds in my home on O'Brian Street, for which I could find no explanation. These occurred when all the family had retired to rest. On a recent occasion, having been taken by Mr. X. to witness the possible occurrence of such phenomena, in the broad daylight, in the office of the Town Clerk, six electric lamps were thrown onto the floor and exploded, and one fell without exploding, making seven lamps in all thus thrown, in the presence of the Town Clerk, his Lady Clerk, Mr. X. (who took the broken lamps away and the unbroken one), —— ———, my brother, and myself. All these persons were in plain view of my brother and myself and none of them could have thrown these lamps, which were apparently the property of the town, without our seeing them. This startling manifestation, made my brother and myself rather nervous.

M—— T——.

Witness: Mr. X.

In the next Mr. X. continues further account of the phenomena and refers to additional corroborative statements which follow his own.

Windsor, N. S., January 17th, 1907.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,

Dear Sir:—I wrote you yesterday enclosing two statements, and also sent you under separate enclosure, a brief note from Mr. H——. While I was concluding my letter to you, I received your wire, and within a quarter of an hour afterwards, left my reply thereto, at the Western Union office. I have succeeded after some difficulty, in getting an opportunity, to speak to him alone, and in getting Richard F—— to sign the enclosed statement. The phenomena are of course, as Sir W. Crooks has, I think, said, illusive, and of course I cannot tell how these mischievous and in some cases dangerous intelligences, will act when you arrive, but from persistent and long continued and present phenomena, I should judge that they will keep up their manifestations, when you arrive, perhaps with even more power, if that were possible. As far as I can judge, they or most of them, have no ill will to me, and seem rather to prove that the curious things which have occurred here, and are still occurring, were not done by people in the body. You can get a good stenographer in the evenings and possibly after 5 P. M., and likely for a portion of a day, during your stay here. I should like you to take one of my letters to a medium in New York, and see what he or she says about the conditions here, for I have a good idea of the identity of some of those who are communicating, and the medium ought to easily get on the track of these things here. Will you kindly inform me when you will arrive here, as I will, if possible, meet you at the station. It will be best to be very quiet about your mission, and I wish to talk to you on the best way of managing things here, immediately on your arrival. The shortest route is from New York to Boston, then by steamer to Yarmouth, and by rail from thence to Windsor. These steamers, I think, are only running twice a week, on Wednesday and Saturday. You can get the information in New York, about this route and the longer sea route, to Halifax from Boston.

Sincerely yours,

Statements.

Windsor, N. S., January 17th, 1907.

I am conducting the business of a barber, and have been doing so for many years, in the town of Windsor. My present stand is on Gerrish Street. During a recent period and no later than this morning, things have taken place, in and about my shop, which I cannot understand and which were certainly not the result of trickery, or idle mischief on the part of my employees, or any customer who might be in the store when they happened. Foreign coins of small value, have been dropped on the floor, but the puzzle was where did they come from, for I am certain neither myself nor my employees had them previously. One of these men has several of these coins in his possession. Mr. X. has one, a Jamaica cent dropped near him a little time ago in Livingston's Restaurant, seized by one of the men who happened to be in there (despite Mr. X's remonstrance) and five days afterward, when Mr. X. came into my place on some business, the same coin fell near him and me, and I gave it to him. It was taken apparently out of my man's pocket, his coat being hung up. He claimed the cent, saying it was in his pocket, but Mr. X. would not return it to him. This morning, about 10:30 Mr. X. came into my shop, to see me about making this statement. While he was in there, an acetylene gas burner fell on the floor, which I thought had been taken out of my gas branch, at first, but I was mistaken. I don't know where it came from and I gave it to Mr. X. One of our cents of 1906 fell and was also taken by him, and as he went out of the door, an electric lamp (I have none of them about my premises), was thrown out after him, on to the sidewalk. It did not explode. This is the third electric lamp which has been thrown by something and from somewhere. I don't know by whom, or whence. Other strange things, I and others in my shop have witnessed, at various times, but this is sufficient to show that these occurrences should be thoroughly investigated.

R— F—.

The next is an affidavit by another witness.

Statement of Edward King of Windsor, in the County of Hants, in the Province of Nova Scotia, Dominion of Canada, Cabinet Maker, made this 28th day of Jan. A. D. 1907.

I am now employed in Windsor, aforesaid, in the Furniture Factory there, in fitting up bureaus. I have some knowledge of the strange and mysterious things occurring in this town. On Thursday afternoon last, about 12.30, I went into the Store on Water Street, to purchase some bird seed for Mr. F..... H....., the Boss of the shipping room in the Furniture Factory. I saw several boxes, apparently some of them containing goods, and some of them empty, falling on the floor close to me. There were only two Clerks in the store, and the bookkeeper in the elevated office, at rear end of the store. Their names were E..... R....., he was waiting on me, a boy named F....., and the bookkeeper, W..... R....., and I am certain none of these persons threw these boxes. R..... said for me not "to take any notice of these things, that things were fired round there all the time. Curious things like that were happening all over town, in cellars, and things had been seen of which no account could be given."

On Saturday afternoon, the 26th of January, 1907, H—— W——, who works with me in the furniture factory, and I, went down into the cellar of the shipping room of the factory, to bring up some crates to put bureaus in. When we got into the cellar, we both saw the figure of a man in the further end of the cellar, running back and forth and groaning. The figure was kind of white, and looked like an old man. We were frightened and ran back up stairs and told the boss, Mr. H——, what we had seen. He said these things had been seen down there before, right after F—— H—— was killed. It wasn't worth while to pay attention to it.

(Signed) E—— K——.

Witness:

The statement having first been read over in my presence to E—— K——. (Signed.)

R. B. D——.

A critical examination of the report is not necessary in connection with the investigation which we also report below. But I may call attention to a few incidents which were the primary ones inviting the consideration of the case.

The first circumstance that attracts attention is the statement that a headless figure had been seen in one of the cellars associated with the phenomena. Had this been reported to Mr. X without any alleged experience of the kind by himself it would have been part and parcel of the general story from the point of view of those who were or who had to be suspected of trickery. But as Mr. X reports seeing an apparition independently of other physical manifestations, the case thus assumes the character which is often given to telekinetic phenomena. The association of an apparition with such real or alleged events gives them a different appearance, and this, too, on any theory whatever of their nature. If the apparition be only the result of suggestion and the tendency to hallucination under this influence, the occurrence of such things would throw much light on many traditional stories which can neither be believed nor repudiated. That is, it would explain a perfectly natural illusion and the persistence of stories which are neither lies nor credible as representative of reality.

The outcome of the investigation shows that we have just such illusion here. The groans of the person in the box which were taken to be those of a certain deceased person by the reporter were found to be those of the "naughty boy," and tho the reporter seems to have either suspected this explanation or to have been apprised of it by the very persons playing the trick upon him, he nevertheless rejected it in the face of his own sensation which, in the light of his persistent convictions, seem to have been remarkably interesting illusions. The only alternative to this view of them would be the deliberate desire on his part to represent the facts in this manner in order that he might evade the accusation of this illusion.

I think the reader, after these remarks, will realize how the whole narrative is infected with illusion, and the report of Mr. Carrington will confirm the suspicion.

The following account by Mr. X., as the reader will observe, was written after Mr. Carrington left Windsor, but represents a part of the account of the phenomena which he claimed to have observed. Its proper place is, therefore antecedent to Mr. Carrington's Report. Taken in connection with Mr. Carrington's report, this account is a most interesting and important psychological document. I know nothing that illustrates better the difficulties which the scientific student has to meet in narratives of the marvellous than this account. It is the habit of the intellectuals to laugh at them instead of use them to educate the community of the existence and extent of mal-observation and illusion. There is so much that is earnest in the statements of Mr. X., who is evidently an intelligent man in all other respects, tho certainly credulous and lacking in humor in this matter, that it ill becomes the educator to laugh whose business is the direction and disillusioning of his fellows. No doubt it is often hopeless to attempt the correction of some people's errors, and it is also, perhaps, often as thankless as it is hopeless. But the humorousness of the situation is so overwhelming that one's own seriousness is apt to degenerate into an unhealthy solemnity where ridicule is the only weapon of education. But despite all this I am sure that the only way to vindicate the judgment of the intellectuals is the serious exposure of errors that lead the multitudes, and that the duty of the intelligent class is to unbend more, if in this democratic age it ever expects to rule its masters.

Mr. X's Final Report.

Windsor, N. S., February 4th, 1907.

Dr. James H. Hyslop,

Dear Sir:—It is with regret that I now give you some details of the extraordinary behaviour of Mr. H. Carrington, in the supposed investigation which you dispatched him from New York to make into the strange manifestations which have been occurring here now for nearly a year and are still taking place. I only received your letter of introduction of

the 18th ult., yesterday afternoon, and I was not in when he left it with one of my boys on the evening of the 23rd inst., when he arrived in Windsor. It was enclosed in a larger envelope, unaddressed, and though I saw it, I took it for a blank envelope, my son not having mentioned that he had left it, but I was on the lookout for him and thought he would arrive that afternoon. I went to the Victoria Hotel on the chance of finding him there, as it is the principal hotel in the place, and I saw his name on the hotel register, so I lost no time in hunting him up, being much pleased with the idea that these mysterious happenings were now about to be looked into, as I supposed thoroughly, by a person who was competent for the undertaking. I talked to him for over an hour in his bed room, and gave him some of the experiences I had had in the town during the past few months, and even on that very day. He seemed quite interested. I warned him not to disclose his identity, and to avoid mentioning to any one what his business in Windsor was. I put him on his guard as to the unreliability of many persons in the town, especially on this subject, and I stated that it was my experience here, that almost every physical medium was a liar. I noticed a change in his countenance when I told him I was not a spiritualist, and I observed that, in the little chance I had subsequently to this evening to talk to him, he did not at all relish my statements of the evil effects sometimes of spirit influence, obtaining almost absolute control of the lives of people, as most unhappily realized in my own domestic relations, and in another case of a different character which I mentioned to him. He appeared to listen to the facts I gave him with interest, and I plainly understood from him, that he would spend some time here, probably a week or more, and he asked me to engage a stenographer and typewriter, to take down the extracts from my diary which I told him was full of accounts of the manifestations which had occurred in the town during the past months and recently. He said he would ask me questions while some of these accounts were being type-written, and I agreed to answer any such question. I offered him the use, both for himself and the type-writer, of my office. The next day I

saw a competent stenographer and typewriter, but she could not come that Thursday evening, expecting to be absent from town, but I arranged for her to come to my office the succeeding evening. I had also offered Mr. Carrington, for this young lady, the use of my typewriter, so I did all I could in this way to help him, in fact, I did so in every way. I informed him that she was a fast writer, and that I did not think it would be necessary to take down the matter in short hand, but it could be taken by her on the typewriter. He seemed disappointed that she could not come to my office on Thursday evening. In the light of his subsequent conduct, I think, he was even then in a hurry to get back to New York, and had made up his mind to leave Windsor as soon as possible. He told me something of obtaining even 500 sheets of matter, and at the very first, there seemed no limit as to the time of his stay, or the extent of the information he wished or which he had been instructed to obtain. You will therefore readily see that at first it never entered my brain that he would not give me any opportunity of posting him up as to the character of my presumed correct information about these things which he may have received behind my back, and that he would not give me a chance to give him further information and an opportunity of introducing him to several honest and reliable citizens who have had personal experiences of the phenomena happening here.

Now, to the account of what took place when we were together. On Thursday morning I went to the Victoria Hotel at 9:30 by appointment with him, and we visited several places. We were in the rattan factory—and made an appointment with the employees to go there at 3 P. M. In a grocery store an apple fell on the floor of the store, which the principal partner in the firm said had been in the front window. There was no one near the spot where the apple had been, so there was the movement of an article without visible contact with any mortal. This is, of course, a trifling thing, but one such occurrence properly evidenced is of importance. As to the merchant, he is a man of good standing in the community, and his word is to be depended upon.

He told us about the inexplicable movements of some empty boxes, in his back shop, which I had purchased from him a few days before. He said they were removed from their first position back to the lift. I took Mr. C. into the back shop and showed him the distance the boxes had been removed, at least ten feet. One of the boxes must have weighed twenty pounds. To say that this apple was thrown to play a trick on me, or that these boxes were thus moved in my absence, to an inconvenient place for the driver to get them to bring to me, is on a par with the abundant falsehoods which have been uttered in this town about similar and far more extraordinary things, to endeavor to make out that such manifestations were the result of a general conspiracy among our citizens, to play practical jokes on me. When the apple was thrown on the floor, no customer was in the store, only the merchant and one of his clerks, and Mr. C. and I and both of them are above suspicion of trickery and none of us were near where the grocer said the apple had been. We went into a book store for a moment; the proprietor, who is mediumistic, and one of his clerks were out. Nothing occurred. A butcher shop was visited, a boy employed in there told me that 5 P. M., was the best time to go there to see things thrown around. We went there again at five, and the butcher and his boy were out, but as they are both, I consider, mediums, and only the wife of the butcher was in the shop, it was not worth while to stay there. The visits were only for a moment in these places, except at the grocers, and these, I think were all the places we went into that morning. I told Mr. C. Wednesday evening that he had better witness the phenomena with his own eyes first, for I thought that being a presumed expert, that would be the most satisfactory course to pursue; such evidence being, with me, more conclusive than any other, and the promiscuous running about the town of Mr. C. alone, seeking for information from people who were perfect strangers to him (a course which he almost immediately entered upon), could only end, in the condition of things in this town, in his being stuffed full of falsehoods. After such an investigation as I proposed, I intimated to him, that I would give him names of reliable peo-

ple whom he could interview on their own personal experiences in these things. Thursday afternoon at 3, we went to the Rattan Factory. I omitted to mention that on Thursday morning, I also took Mr. C. over to the depot, to see a young man there, who is clerk to the truck master of the Windsor and Halifax Branch Railway. I was not able to see this young man as he was very busy. He had told me on Wednesday of some curious things which had happened in the house where he is boarding, kept by a man who is one of the most powerful mediums in the town. Of course the things he told me, were, to the persons ignorant utterly of such occurrences, unbelievable. He told me that a new trunk which he had recently bought, and which had cost him \$12.00 (he being absent for a day with his door locked) on his return, had disappeared, and he did not know what had become of it. He also told me, that he was dressing in his bedroom on one occasion recently, and laid a white shirt on his bed to put it on, and when he turned to the bed to do so, it had disappeared likewise. On Thursday morning I met him on the street, and he said Mr. ———, referring to his landlord, had made his first appearance that morning on his hands and knees, crawling downstairs head first. The vanishing of the trunk has been confirmed by another boarder. I told these peculiar occurrences to Mr. C. but he never expressed the slightest desire subsequently, to hear what this young man had to say, nor do I think he set eyes on him while he was in Windsor. This medium is distinguished outside his own house for the smashing of electric lamps in his presence. I have seen fifteen of those lamps smashed, thrown on the floor of the town clerk's office, and exploding and scattering the pieces of glass around the office. Some of them taken out of the burners in that office and in an adjoining room, and all of them presumably, the property of the town of Windsor. This happened in broad daylight, generally in the morning, in the presence of several witnesses, always the town clerk and his lady clerk, and on one occasion Miss Thompson, from whom I sent a statement to you, and her brother were also present, and the medium was in clear sight of all of us when these lamps were smashed

and could not possibly have thrown one of them without being detected. On the occasion Miss T. and her brother were present, there were six lamps thrown on the outside floor of the town clerk's office, and they exploded and broke into small pieces, scattering the glass all over that floor and another fell and did not explode. I took what remained of the stock of the lamps and the whole one away with me. These things made Miss T. and her brother nervous, but I am so accustomed to them and similar ones, that I do not mind them at all. I suggested to Mr. C. the desirability of seeing this man, with a view, in my own mind, of getting him to give a similar exhibition, if I may call it so, in that office, or elsewhere. Mr. C. was as apathetic as usual and made me no reply, and I do not think he saw the man, and if he did, if he confined himself to trying to get anything out of him, he would not have got the truth, for he is afraid of losing his situation, and would have probably uttered the stale lie, that he did these things to fool me. The only way any one can arrive at the truth about these matters in this town, outside the testimony of persons whom I know to be reliable, is to witness the phenomena for themselves, and when they do, there will be no use for any of these mediums or any one else (generally from selfish motives), to lie about them, for the investigator will himself know, by the evidence of his own senses, if he is not a fool, or himself a medium, that the things he has witnessed are genuine, and not the result of trickery. You understand that none of the mediums here are spiritualists or know anything about psychic matters. (I have just received your letter of 1st inst., and am glad Mr. C. had not handed you any report of his doings here before you had received my letter.) These mediums are what I may term unconscious mediums. They either more or less dreamily recall some of the things which happen in their presence. They are generally in a more or less trance condition, and very often do not remember anything which takes place, so if any person should inquire of these persons, concerning their experiences in this regard, those persons could truthfully answer, that they knew nothing about them, and yet this is the course, I am inclined to think, from what

I have been told, that Mr. C. pursued while he was in Windsor, behind my back.

I am writing this on the typewriter direct, without any copy, so you must excuse the construction of some of my sentences, and the reference to events somewhat outside the order in which they should be, as my memory recalls them.

Now, for what happened in the rattan factory. In company with Mr. C., after going upstairs to the second story, I saw several chairs, rocking chairs, oscillating for some time without any one being near them. He rushed around, saying something about looking for a string, which I am sure he did not find. I saw the trap door of the third story with difficulty lifted by one of the employees, after several efforts, there being some force pressing that door against him, though there was no one upstairs. I saw Mr. C. run up those stairs and push the trap door back, and I saw it fall down again after he had done so, apparently by its own volition. He was up in the third story at the time. Immediately, upon my going into the second story, I heard a voice calling me. I recognized it as the same voice which had held a conversation with me, pretty nearly in the same spot of the second story, several days before. I put it then in the witness box, and satisfied myself, by the answers I got to my questions, that it was a spirit, but a lying spirit. I called Mr. C's attention to this voice. He said, it didn't interest him, he wanted to "observe the movement of articles." I must say that from my standpoint, it is very important to discover the hidden cause behind these movements of articles. The voice complained that I had not done something that he had asked me to do on the former occasion. I replied, that it had lied to me then. The voice then swore at me, and I at once moved away from the spot, and ceased to talk to it. It is idle to talk of trickery in connection with this voice, for when I talked to it before, I satisfied myself, that its knowledge of a certain matter I questioned it about, was greater than that of any of the employees in the establishment. The voice sounded right under the floor of the second story and was several yards away from the place in that story, where it spoke to me before.

There are of course several ingenious theories set afloat by people who have never been in this factory, and who would hate to be disturbed in their belief, that the so-called dead, are in fixed places, called heaven and hell, from which they cannot get out, and there are others so frightened at what is called the supernatural, that they will adopt any theory, no matter how ridiculous, to explain such occurrences, as are, and have been taking place in this factory, and in many places in this town. The theory of pipes leading up from the ground floor to this story, is one of these explanations, which has no foundation in fact. There are steam pipes, that is all, and after all, if there were other means of secretly communicating from the lower floor to the upper ones, not one of the employees could have answered the questions I put to the voice the first time I talked with it, in the manner this voice did. On that second floor I picked up an old cent, and handed it to Mr. C. In a transient glance at it, I could not perceive any date on it, it was so smooth. On the ground floor, Clarence P., one of the employees picked up an old cent, date 1783, the year, by the way, the United States gained their Independence. On Mr. Carrington asking him for it, he gave it to him. I did not hear either of these cents fall, probably on account of the debris on the floors, but I do not for one moment believe, that P. or any one of his fellow workmen, threw it there, for if they, or any one of them had owned it, they would have kept it. A gentleman in Windsor, who is an expert in old coins, said to me, on my telling him about this cent, that he wished he had it, he also said that it was worth \$5.00. The idea that any one of these young men would throw such a rare and valuable coin on the floor, to fool me, or any one else, and subsequently readily part with the possession of it,—as P. did,—is preposterous, and on a par with other silly and lying theories afloat in this town to account for the varied and widespread phenomena constantly occurring in it, on the ground, and often I am not present when these manifestations happen,—that numerous persons are playing tricks upon me. One of the employees has informed me, that he has picked up in this factory at various

times twenty pieces of coin, many of them old, and he has promised to show them to me. I never saw any silver coins drop in this place, and I never saw one in it pick up any such coins except the ones mentioned. Who then, in it is trying to play such an extraordinary and expensive trick, and in the name of common sense, what is the object of it? No! the explanation of these apports, must be looked for beyond the employees in this factory. They probably earn only enough to live on, and it would be perfect nonsense for any one to assert, that they are flinging these coins about,—here and there, in their workshop. No! if any one of them had acquired these coins, he would either carefully hoard them or sell them, or such of them as are rare old coins, to some collector, and spend any modern ones for his own purposes.

Windsor, Tuesday, February 5th, 1907.

Sitting in a rocking chair on the ground floor of this factory on that Thursday afternoon, I saw a queer looking $\frac{1}{2}$ -bbl.* descend to the floor, from under the pipes—steam pipes—which run along next to the stairs leading up to the second story. I was sitting in front of these stairs, with an uninterrupted view of them, and of these pipes. It was impossible for any one to open the door at the head of these stairs and descend them a step or two, and reach out his hands and arms away from the stairs out towards the main floor, and put this article under the pipes, without my seeing him. My eyesight is as good as ever it was, and I have never worn glasses. This case alone is proof enough for me, that articles are moved about, and heavy ones, without the aid in any way of the employees in this building, or of any other mortal. Mr. C., was, at the time of the fall of this $\frac{1}{2}$ -bbl., upstairs. I do not know what to call this wooden thing. It is really not a $\frac{1}{2}$ -bbl., it is not the shape of one. The employees all told me that there was nothing of the kind about this shop and that they had never seen it before. Since that, one of them, —who has always been bitterly opposed to admitting that the movement of things there was the result of the action of any invisible influence, though he never gave me any explanation

* Barrel.

of it—has said to me, that the $\frac{1}{2}$ -bbl. belonged in the shop, and was a pattern. He had previously told me, with the others, that it did not belong there, so he has voluntarily contradicted himself, and his statements cannot be considered reliable. I do not see what such a looking thing could be a pattern for, in that rattan factory. A young man, in whom I can place reliance, has informed me, that he never saw this $\frac{1}{2}$ -bbl. there, and he is in there every day. Whether this $\frac{1}{2}$ -bbl.—as I will call it, for want of a correct name for it—belongs in the factory, is really not of importance, the question of interest being, did it fall, a distance of I should think ten feet at least, without the intervention of any mortal? I can state that since I saw it fall as described, I have seen it fall, in an exactly similar way from under these pipes, when I was sitting in the same position, and it was impossible, for any person in the body to cause its fall without my detecting him. I may also state, that I had a clear view of the pipes for several yards on both occasions, and there was nothing at all on them.

Mr. C. was very little with me in this factory, and whether he asked any questions of the employees, and of this particular one, I do not know, but it will be apparent to you that if he did, he could not depend on the statements made to him. While I am writing about this particular place, I may as well inform you, that, about all the employees being physical mediums, perhaps all of them, they are not competent witnesses to the things transpiring in their presence, or as to similar manifestations in the past, for the power being taken out of them, to perform them, they are necessarily muddled in their brains, and their condition resembles that of partially, or wholly hypnotized subjects. For instance, on this Thursday afternoon they took me, with perhaps one exception, to be Dr. Black, M. P., at Ottawa, for this county, whom I do not resemble in the least, and they wondered where Mr. X was, as they said he was to be there at three, and this in my presence. Of course the stale and false explanation can be given, that they were only fooling, and that this non-recollection of me, and taking me for a totally different person, was a part of the general scheme of

trickery, to deceive me with regard to the phenomena. This delusion with regard to my identity is prevalent throughout the town, and wherever the persons are mediums,—and this town is full of them—or mediumistic, men, women and boys, who have known me for years, are continually unable to recognize me, and call me by other names, the familiar and common delusion being that I am one of the medical gentlemen in the town, though I have been addressed by several other names, and when questioned at the time by persons who were in full possession of their senses, these hypnotized people would insist that I was the person they had called me.

Many years ago I discovered that I was a powerful mesmerizer, as it was termed in those days, and I came very near embarking into mesmerizing as a business, and could have retired with a competence in a few years, had I done so, but I found, in my personal experience that I was dabbling with a most dangerous thing, and that certain extraordinary things happened, which could not be attributed to my will or to any emanation from my person. I therefore abandoned mesmerism, and have not practised it since, even in private, but you will see, that my knowledge of, and experience in it, enabled me very quickly to perceive, when men and boys and young women in this town, during the past few months were under an influence largely, but not altogether, resembling the ordinary hypnotic state, and also enable me to bring them out of this state temporarily, which I have done many times. What is the use of trying, to put it mildly, to gain information from them when they are in this condition, or to ask them when they are in a normal condition, what happened when they were in their hypnotic state? I do not know whether Mr. C. made any such attempts in this factory, to elicit facts from the employees, but from trustworthy information, he certainly went alone to persons in Windsor in whose presence myself and several competent and intelligent witnesses have seen exhibited various phenomena, which can be proved by evidence outside of my own testimony altogether, and which were not the result of any trickery attempted on me, but were genuine. The evidence of such hypnotized persons in their normal condition, as to what they

did, or what transpired in their presence, while under this extraordinary influence, is utterly valueless. Any one who ever has witnessed a genuine hypnotic exhibition, is fully aware, that the hypnotized persons can be made, and do make the most ridiculous spectacles of themselves in the presence of the audience, having no other will than that of the hypnotizer, and yet when brought to themselves, they will emphatically deny, and sometimes become very angry, when told by friends or strangers what foolish things they have done. Mr. C. did not inform me of his opinion of what he saw in this factory, and he was equally non-committal about his other experiences in Windsor. In fact he must have cabled on the object of his mission, and its results to several people here, whom he never mentioned to me. This, I submit, was exceedingly unfair treatment, and not at all the way to reach satisfactory results, and was in direct opposition to the advice I at once gave him, to keep himself and his object in coming here, as much in the background as possible, until he had personally thoroughly investigated the whole field, and had witnessed with his own eyes the manifestations. I should no more think of going among perfect strangers—if I had been sent by some society to look into such matters in a similar town in the state of New York—and ignoring the person through whom the knowledge of the manifestations had come, than I would think of robbing a bank.

After our visit to this factory we went into a bookstore, and there was the only instance of trickery I observed while Mr. C. was with me. The girl clerk, standing near the door of the shop, two other girls—her visitors, near her and we standing about the middle of the shop, threw one after another, three small articles a very short distance from her. Not suspecting she would do such a thing, and having witnessed a lot of manifestations in this place when the proprietor himself was present—he was out on this occasion—I thought at first this was a genuine occurrence. The girl immediately acknowledged that she threw these things, and subsequently apologized to me for doing so. I think she is mediumistic, and I am yet to find a physical medium who will

not occasionally play tricks. The proprietor of this store is mediumistic, and his two clerks are mediums, and it may be necessary to have them all in there—if no mediumistic customer is in the shop at the time—in order to insure manifestations. That condition of things did not exist in this store in the two brief visits we paid to it. To give you an idea of some things which have occurred in it, on one occasion several souvenir post cards and some valuable books were splashed with fresh ink, while I was in the shop. They were not close together—I mean the cards and the books—and there was no possibility of their being thus injured accidentally by this girl. One of the medium male clerks was present, and no one else was in the store. As the cards were spoiled, the girl gave them to me.

Last Thursday I was in this shop between 11 and 12 noon. One of the leading doctors came in, and shortly afterwards a large stamp for making parcels was thrown near me. This was not remarkable, only the doctor said to me, that as he was holding some commercial note paper in his hands, this stamp—he was several feet from me—flew out at the end of the paper, and that the paper was nearly clutched out of his hands. There was no clerk near him, and none of them would dare act to him so. It probably explains why this thing should happen while the doctor was in this shop, to say that the doctor boards in the house from which the young man's trunk and shirt vanished, and did not return. I said something to the doctor about his boarding place, and he said that he wouldn't undertake to tell what went on there, but he said the victuals sometimes were taken from his plate at meals. The doctor's word can be relied on. I judge by this girl's manner that Mr. C. may have asked her some questions, and she, if he did so, would not be likely to tell him anything, which she would think would injure her employer's business, and that is another and great obstacle here, in getting at the facts. People's business is the first consideration to them, and there is no disposition on the part of merchants generally to talk to any one about strange things which have taken place in their stores, especially to strangers, and particularly, as you will readily perceive, to a

person who is from abroad, and is known to be investigating these things. Publication of the facts is what most of them dread, hence the ready falling into, on their part, of the idea, false as it is, of their clerks putting up what is termed "a job on me," or to employ another slang phrase, used in this connection "pulling my leg." The last thing they want circulated, is, that their places are what is termed "haunted;" such a report would, they think, have a most prejudicial effect upon their business. I do not know whether Mr. C. thought these phenomena were on tap in this town, like molasses or vinegar. It is very marked, but it might be necessary, in some places, to go into them (when he was here) for several times a day, or for several days, in order to get the proper conditions. With your experience you will comprehend this fact.

On Thursday afternoon he went into Flemming's shop alone. What took place there, he never told me, except that he said that he saw no phenomena there. That he had already expressed an opinion on the meaning of the happenings here, is evident, from the fact that between 2 and 3 this Thursday afternoon, having to go up to the Court House to see the Registrar of Probate, that gentleman spoke of Mr. C., and said that he had been told, that he, Mr. C., had not found things as he expected here, and I gathered that he had said this to the proprietor of the hotel where he was a guest. He had not been in the rattan factory then. This was jumping to conclusions with a vengeance. Why did he take any one into his confidence to that extent, and why did he shut up his mind on what he witnessed, and what he was told, to me? There was a change in him towards me Thursday morning. Was the change produced by some untruths, poured into his apparently receptive mind by some one in the hotel? Whatever the cause of his complete reticence towards me,—I might use with justice a much stronger word—he should not in fairness to me, have listened to people's tales, complete strangers to him—without telling me what they had told him, so that I might have refuted their statements. In truth, he should not have talked about his mission at all, under the peculiar conditions to which I have

already referred, except to such persons as I could point out as reliable. The fact of his being from New York, and his object in coming here was made known by himself before he had been here a day, and that Thursday afternoon, from what I have been told, subsequent to his departure, he communicated the same intelligence to several persons in this town. He could not have pursued a more unwise course, nor one more likely to lead him utterly astray as to the facts.

I had acquainted him with a very singular occurrence which took place at the room of a student of King's College, the afternoon of the day of his arrival. I had gone up to the college to see a student, to write for me an account of a hockey match to take place that evening in the rink, for the Halifax Chronicle, for which I am the correspondent here. He took me up into his room in the third story of the college. He told me about a wedding that was to be celebrated in the College Chapel that afternoon, and I took notes of the facts within his knowledge of the celebration of this marriage. While he was doing so, several articles fell to the floor. There was a chair leg, a package of papers unfastened, directed to the Kings College Record, containing parliamentary papers from Ottawa, a Greek lexicon, and a large match safe. Mr. H——, the student, told me that the Greek lexicon did not belong in his room, but was another student's, in the room below, on the second story and looking into it on the title page, I saw the name of E. A. B——, the student Mr. H—— referred to. I picked these things up several times, but they were thrown on the floor each time. I took away the package of Parliamentary papers, and it is now in my possession. There was no one in the room but this student and myself and he was sitting in the room close to me, giving me the desired information and could not have thrown any of these articles without my observing it. He is a gentleman, and would not resort to such fooling. We were not talking about such manifestations, but both our minds were directed to the business on hand. I asked him while these things were being thrown about, "what he thought of such matters?" He replied, that he "didn't believe in them." That was all the conversation we had then on the subject.

When I had nearly completed my notes, another student, Mr. B. M——, came into H——'s room. He took up immediately the lexicon and went down stairs with it. I heard some kind of confused noises outside the room I was in, apparently some little distance away, and forthwith the lexicon was thrown violently back into the apartment from which it had been taken, and Mr. M—— followed it after a few seconds delay, in a very nervous and excited state, apparently on the verge of hysteria. Another student, Mr. D. O—— accompanied him into Mr. H——'s rooms. After calming him some, I asked Mr. M—— what had happened. He said that he didn't know what took the book out of his hand on the landing of Mr. B——'s room. He could see no one trying to take it, but something forced it out of his hands. Mr. M—— is a strong and healthy young gentleman. I have witnessed a good many cases of similar control in Windsor during the past months, but I never seen so sudden and powerful a control as in this case. In a few moments I had finished my notes, and I suggested to Mr. L. H. H—— — thinking he was a sceptic—that he had better take the lexicon down into B——'s room. He took it and went out of his room, but only got to the landing outside of it, when it was taken forcibly from his hands, and thrown on the landing floor. He picked it up several times, only to have it by some invisible power taken from him again and thrown on the floor. As this was exhausting to him, I took the book from the floor, and carried it back into his room. I have always been able to handle things, which the mediums cannot hold or lift. He had lost considerable vitality, but was not so seriously controlled as Mr. M——. When I left the college—which I did immediately after the second episode with this book—I took the lexicon without any difficulty down stairs into Mr. B——'s room and left it there.

Mr. C. listened with attention to this experience of mine, and expressed his opinion that the tearing of the book out of these young men's hands was an unusual thing, I think he considered it to be unique. He suggested that we should go to the college before he went away. I replied that I would not go there, without the consent of the faculty, as

there was a tendency in some circles to hold me accountable for these outbreaks, and I would not be willing to be blamed, if any of the students were obliged to leave their studies, in consequence of these controls exhausting their physical and mental powers. I may say that the first time that the lexicon was thrown into this room, it came up the stairs and then had to turn straight round at right angle, to enter Mr. M——'s apartment. After Mr. C. came out of F——'s barber shop, on the afternoon of this Thursday, I met Mr. M—— and Mr. O——, who witnessed the taking away of the lexicon from Mr. M——, and I invited them up into my law office which was near, to tell Mr. C. about this book matter. They went into my office and confirmed what I had told Mr. C., Wednesday evening, about Mr. M—— and the book. Mr. C. was showing them the cents he had obtained in the factory, when Mr. M—— was suddenly controlled, some little parcel about his person fell on the floor. I immediately laid hold of him and took him out of my office. He rallied rapidly and asked me to get his gold eyeglasses. I went back into my office and Mr. C. handed them to me. I don't know whether they fell on the floor or not. I gave them to Mr. M—— in the hall. He didn't want to go back into my office, and I certainly did not want him there, I pity him, poor fellow! He said to me in the hall: "I am afraid of you, Mr. X." I told him to keep away from me. It is a fact, that people subject to such influences are apt to be controlled in my presence.

Any idea of trickery in connection with these young student's of King's College is not to be entertained for a moment. I have seen four of them controlled in a similar way. Two of them coming into my office and informing me since Mr. C's departure, that when near my office they heard my voice calling them, when I did not know they were in town. The college is a mile out of town. One of these students has been three times in my office under a similar delusion, once, before Mr. C's arrival here, and twice since; another has been in twice, once the day of Mr. C's coming, and once since, and a third student turned up with one of the other three last Monday, for the first time, all of them on each occasion—ex-

cept in the case of M—— —insisting that I had called them on the street, and all of them being controlled when in my office, more or less. I have warned every one of them to keep away from me, and to pay no attention to any voice which they think is mine calling them on the street near my office, but with two of them at least, my admonitions seemingly so far, have had no effect. Mr. C. remarked to me after meeting Mr. M—— and Mr. O——, that it would not be necessary now to visit the college.

I take this remark now, as an indication of his concealed design to hurry out of Windsor as soon as possible, for certainly it would be valuable evidence for him to have seen the snatching of a book or some other article out of some mediumistic student's hands, which seems to be one of the forms of manifestations in the student's rooms at the college. I had spoken to him about going to the Windsor foundry, in which for a long period, loud knockings had been heard. He never alluded to the foundry after I spoke to him about it.

After he left the bookstore he went, so he said, to the W—— stores. It was impossible for me to accompany him there, as I had written to one of the managers of that store on the 12th and 14th days of January ult., a long letter in which I pointed out the disgraceful state of affairs, both in the main grocery store, and the millinery department attached to it, and had plainly intimated that the discharge of some of the clerks was essential to put a stop to the wild and ridiculous actions of most of the clerks, in fact all of them were badly affected, for while some of these clerks were retained, there was no chance of the rest of them being freed from the abnormal influence which at times seized them. I have seen all the male clerks and one of the girl clerks in these shops in a hypnotized state at the same time, and the remaining lady clerks at last succumbed to the same influence, so there was not a clerk in either store whom I had not seen in a state in which they neither knew the ridiculous actions they were doing, nor could they remember what they had done or said in that unbalanced mental condition, when they became normal. It was to such persons, as I am in-

formed, as the men and the two girl clerks of the W— stores that, Mr. C.—I am credibly informed—went to inquire about the phenomena which I had in a general way, told him had occurred in these stores.

I had spoken to the resident manager several times, particularly the action of one of the girls, in mesmerizing the other. I told him I had warned her to desist from such practices. At last when this young lady was still subjected to this influence, and she herself finally became subject to it, and knowing there was a tremendous spirit power at work in both stores, making very dangerous conditions for the last and most innocent victim of the influences at work, I spoke twice to another gentleman, whose authority they dread. (He is connected with the stores in some way, and is in the main store, passing through his office several times a day, and has, outside the general management of the plaster business, which the firm residing and hailing from your city, conduct here, and this firm also conducts the business of the W— Stores) and had threatened some of the clerks if they did not stop, he would discharge them. Things were better for a while, and then became worse than ever, so, as I heard this gentleman was going to leave on a visit for an indefinite period, I employed two typewriters, and wrote him a very long letter, going into a good many details to kill out the false statements that his clerks were not under any influence, but just carrying on to fool me, I gave him the names of at least six good witnesses who could prove to him, that the conduct of his clerks could not be attributed to any such cause, and that they had observed very strange behavior on the part especially of all the male clerks in his store. This manager was very indignant at my letter, but he frightened, as nearly as I can tell, all his clerks with a threat of a general discharge, if they did not behave themselves, though I had warned him in my letter that such threats could not avail, as they were in an hypnotized state, when they behave as I informed him they did, and were liable to be in the same condition again, and the most radical measures were necessary to root out the evil.

I mentioned this letter to Mr. C., and told him I would

read it to him. I never had an opportunity of doing so; instead, I am forced to believe that he talked freely to some of these clerks,—a course which he never pursued with me—and lent a greedy ear to their utterances, and with an infinite ability for credulity in some direction, swallowed their statements whole. One of the girl clerks, the one who had not acted rightly, as already referred to, towards her lady-like companion, told me the Monday after the *hegira* of Mr. C., that he had been in their department conversing with herself and the young lady who is there also. She called Mr. C. "Prof." One of our prominent citizens has informed me, that one of the principal male clerks in the W— store told him, that he had a conversation with Mr. C., and he, Mr. C., said that I had written beautiful letters, but as soon as he, Mr. C., saw me, he changed his mind. So, according to Mr. C., the sight of me, in some mysterious manner, affected a change in his former opinions, which opinions presumably he had formed from my beautiful letters. It is true I could not wine or dine him, and the great fire of Oct. 1897, crippled me financially, and I do not wear a beaver, or dress *a-la-mode*, and that I am a very busy man, having through a certain kind of Spiritualism to keep bachelor's hall, alone, and get my own meals, and that besides my business as judge of probate, I am in practice in all the other courts, and that I have through my interest in it, given a great deal of time and attention to the extraordinary phenomena here, but I should think all these things, would be a recommendation to one coming from a democratic country, which is full of hard-working, self-made men, but it seems I did not make a favorable impression on this young man from New York and his brief acquaintance with me served to lessen in some inexplicable way, the importance, perhaps even the fact of the phenomena I had written to you about.

I told him, the last afternoon during which he honored this old town with his presence, with a view to give him some knowledge of my status as a lawyer, that I had been judge for the Probate for the County of Hants for upward of a quarter of a century, and in that long period, not a judgment of mine had ever been set aside, on appeal, but all of them

had been sustained. I had a suspicion when I told him this that he had been prejudiced against the facts I had stated to him, by possibly the clerks in the W— Stores and perhaps by persons whose fear was, that if he reported the facts, their places of business would get the bad reputation of being haunted, and they would consequently lose custom, and it would therefore be advisable to din into his credulous ears, the oft repeated tale that all strange manifestations in the W— Stores, and elsewhere in this town, were the results of tricks played on me by the clerks in these places.

I enclose a statement in writing signed by a young man in this town, with relation to the manifestations occurring in the W— main store, between 12 and 1 o'clock of that Thursday, when Mr. C. was in Windsor, and when later in the day, between 5 and 6, in the afternoon, he was in both of the Wentworth Stores, and was stuffed by the clerks, and perhaps others connected with the establishment. I call your particular attention to what R— said to E— K—, as confirming to a great extent, the fact that for several months previous to the 12th of January last—since which time I have not been in these stores—there had occurred a variety of manifestations, not to be explained by any interference, or trickery, on the part of the persons in the form, about the place. R— is the oldest clerk—I mean has been in the store the longest time of any of the clerks and he is the principal clerk. I did not know this young man K— had been in there, until he made this statement to me. He is an entirely disinterested and truthful witness. R— off guard, not suspecting that I would ever hear of what he said to K—, tells the truth. The clerks on guard and being questioned by a man from New York, who foolishly acquaints them with the cause of his visit to Windsor, tell the stranger quite different stories from the facts stated by R— to K—. Another man, a married man, a cool and trustworthy witness, has informed me that on the Saturday following this Thursday, *i. e.*, on the 26th of January, he was passing on the sidewalk in front of the W— main store, about 1 P. M., and he saw four of the male clerks in the main window—T— being one of them, with his hand high above

his head—all standing up watching T——. They then left the window and rushed back into the store, and then back into the front again, staring out of the windows and whistling. He thought they were crazy. I was not in the vicinity, and knew nothing of their actions on this occasion, until this man informed me of them subsequently. You will observe that K—— refers to seeing a figure in white in the cellar of the shipping room of the furniture factory and you will notice the remark of his boss, F—— H——. But if Mr. C. had known of this place and had gone to Mr. H——, he would not have received any information from him. It is not necessary to write about the W—— Stores any further. It is evident that Mr. C. had not the slightest idea of the proper way to conduct an investigation, and that he was misled thoroughly about the manifestation in those stores and in Windsor.

But after the visit he paid to the W—— Stores that afternoon, Mr. C. desired no further information from me, and he never mentioned to me what persons he had seen in those stores or what they told him. That evening I called at his hotel for a few moments, and he was disinclined to talk to me and I could hardly get a word out of him. I asked him what he thought about the phenomena so far as he had gone, and I did not catch his guarded reply. The next morning I called again at the hotel. I went up to his room, and he was not there. I stopped in the hotel for twenty minutes awaiting him, but was obliged to leave without seeing him. A gentleman informed me afterward that, immediately after my departure, he made his appearance. In the afternoon about 2, he came to my office. He had been keeping out of my way all day, and all he wanted now was Mrs. X's address in Halifax, which I gave him. I asked him if he wanted the typewriter that evening. He made some excuse, and said she would not be required that evening. I spoke of his going to Ellershause, on Monday, by train, to get legal proof of some of the phenomena in Windsor. Ellershause is about ten miles from Windsor. He made no reply. This was surely a nice way to treat me. He knew he was going away the next train, why did he not tell me frankly that he was

on the point of leaving Windsor? In answer to my question where he had been that morning, he replied: "In that grocery and the rattan factory." About three I went into Mr. Murphy's grocery. Mr. Murphy informed me that Mr. C. had not been in there that day. I went to the rattan factory, and every one of the employees told me that he had not been in there. I got another person to inquire subsequently of these employees and they told him that Mr. C. had only been in the factory on Thursday when he was there with me. I went into the hotel after being in these places, and told Mr. C. that Mr. Murphy denied that he had been in his grocery that day, and the employees in the factory denied that he had been in there. He made no answer whatever.

A gentleman in the hotel has told me that that Friday afternoon, knowing I was interested in the matters which he knew Mr. C. was down there about, asked him about me. He said he had "never heard of me." This gentleman is thoroughly reliable. What an extraordinary statement for Mr. C. to make. Thursday afternoon he told a young man in his shop, who asked him what he thought of me, that he "did not believe in this one man business," whatever he meant by that. He also told him that he had been to Pittsburg on a similar mission, and he further informed him that he, Mr. C., was a trance medium. If that last statement is correct, it explains, to a large extent, the extraordinary conduct of Mr. C. towards me while he was in Windsor. A medium of any kind, or at least a trance medium or a physical medium, from their being mediums, are totally unfitted to investigate such phenomena as have been and are now constantly taking place in this town, for they are sure to become more or less muddled about the brain, and to receive erroneous impressions, and, probably, as this young man did, to conceive a prejudice against me and at the best, to receive a very twisted and dreary impression of what they have seen, and if much under control, to fail to remember as this young man did, the person to whom he had been sent in this town. and who was more with him when he was here than any other person in Windsor. I, when I go to the rattan factory, or other

places in the town, where these manifestations are continually taking place, strive to have someone with me in these places, who is able to keep the control of his senses, for the mediums in them are so generally controlled that they do not know what is going on, and will subsequently deny, when in their normal state, that any manifestations occurred. I do not for a moment suppose that you knew Mr. C. was a trance medium, nor do I think that you could have known of his peculiarities, to put it mildly. There is no doubt that he said he was a trance medium. I cannot presume that he was telling an untruth in saying so. I went and informed the typewriter that she would not be wanted that evening. I am not in the habit of breaking such engagements, and I did not like this action on the part of Mr. C. As he wished to avoid me, I did not again call at the hotel until Saturday morning when the proprietor informed me that Mr. C. had left the afternoon of the day before for Halifax, and subsequently, that morning, I received the following letter out of the postoffice from him:

Victoria Hotel,
T. Doran, Proprietor.

Windsor, N. S., Jan. 25th, 1907.

Dear Mr. X.:—I am sorry, I have been called back to New York and left without saying "good-bye," and, perhaps, a trifle prematurely. I was thoroughly satisfied as to the nature of the phenomena observed, however, and we shall doubtless take pleasure in sending you a copy of the report of the occurrences, when it appears. With best wishes, believe me,

Sincerely yours,

HEREWARD CARRINGTON.

P. S.—Many thanks for your kind co-operation and help, in behalf of Dr. Hyslop and myself."

You will see that this letter does not convey any definite idea of the kind of report he was about to submit to you, and any report of his, even if finding the manifestations genuine, would be based on very insufficient and partial data. I re-

peat what I wrote to you—his investigation was a farce. There was literally no investigation into the great body of facts, and continuing phenomena, which it was his duty, as I believe, under your instructions, to gather and witness. He certainly, if he was called back to New York, which seems strange, took his time in getting there. He left Windsor on the afternoon of the 25th, and from your letter I gather that he arrived back in New York on the afternoon of the 31st of January. He mentioned to me when I first saw him a pamphlet which he had got somewhere, called the *Amherst Mystery*, about the queer things happening about a girl called Hester Cox, written by one Hubbell, many years ago. Mr. C. mentioned that he would stop at Amherst on his way home, and make some inquiries about this Amherst affair. It amounted to nothing, compared with the varied and extraordinary and wide-spread phenomena which have for months occurred here and are still continuing; but Mr. C. took his flight from this fruitful field, and apparently went to Amherst to endeavor to resurrect from the dead past, and it might be said from another generation, the facts about this girl, if he could find any one who remembered them. No proceeding could be more foolish or show, if he thus hurriedly left Windsor, in order to visit Amherst on this account, how thoroughly unsuitable Mr. C. is to investigate these mysterious things. The persons who sent you statements he never saw at all. He never, therefore, saw Mr. H—, Mr. L—, Mr. F—, or Miss T—. I wished him to investigate for himself first, and then I would have sent him to these persons. His hurried leaving Windsor, concealing the fact of his going from me till he had gone, in fact when I received his letter he was in Halifax, prevented me from giving him these names, which I would have done if I had known that he was departing thus suddenly. I have perhaps wasted ammunition on Mr. C., but I wanted you to understand fully the condition of things here, and Mr. C.'s conduct enabled me to enter into it fully. I hope you will come yourself as soon as you can conveniently. I have written you a very long letter, but our mutual interest in the subjects dealt with must plead my excuse. I hope to hear from

you at your earliest convenience. I am so busy that I have been a long time writing this letter. I reserve the liberty of using my own letter in my own defence privately here, and publicly, if need should arise in the future, which I cannot believe will be necessary.

Yours sincerely,

Windsor, N. S., Feb. 16th, 1907.

It occurred to me that I had better see that young man, who had picked up so many coins, most of them rare ones. So I managed to see him last evening, and he brought several of the coins, mostly copper, and I took a description of them, after examining them as well as I could, for some of them were so defaced that words on them could not be made out, or only with difficulty. This form of mediumship is, I think, not often met with—Bailey, of Australia, being the best example of it—but I am of opinion that this medium would develop to a great extent along the line of apports, and also in other directions. I have only time to give you a description of five of these pieces.

1. French coin, one side, rim, Colonies, Francais, 10 cents in middle, and date at bottom, 1843. On other side, head, Phillipe I.; word I can't make out from my notes, and Des Francais.

2. Spanish coin, silver, on one side, rim, Dei Gratia, 1772, Carolus III., and head; on the other side, Hispan, et Ind., Rex., 2 R. F. F. Arms.

3. Another Spanish silver coin, similar to the first one, date 1786.

4. U. S. Medal, copper, round the rim on one side, Credit, 1841, Currency, Webster; in center, ship. On the other side, on the rim, Van Buren, Metallic, Currency; stricken ship in center.

I presume you will know about this coin. Were not Van Buren and Webster on opposite sides in politics?

5. Copper cent, date, 1706; head on one side, female figure, sitting with harp beside her on the other side.

6. Province of Nova Scotia, Penny, 1832.

I must really attend to my business now, though I have perhaps not given you the most interesting of the descriptions of the coins. I thought till last evening that this young man had only recently been getting the coins, but he tells me that they began to come to him about two years ago. I also thought he got them all in the rattan factory, but he has got them in several other places. He informs me that a double Eagle U. S., date 1849, about the time Mr. C. was here, was thrown on the cement floor of the engine room of the factory. This was evidently thrown in that place, so that he would be sure to notice it and obtain it, for thrown on that cement floor, the gold coin rattled. If it had fallen outside, on the matter collected on the floor of the factory, he might not have noticed it, and some other employee would have picked it up and appropriated it. It was undoubtedly intended for him, as well as the other coins. The two silver coins described herein were thrown on Fort Hill, an old fort here, built by the English, to repel the assaults of the French and Indians, and he was alone at the time. He has promised to show me this coin, and I have no doubt that he came into possession of these coins exactly as he describes. I know of no coin collector in this town. Two large copper pieces are stamped with the names of apparently former possessors. I may say that while he was in my office, we heard raps, and when we went out of it, raps sounded in various places in the hall, though there was no one upstairs, and all the doors used in the daytime were locked. He accompanied me to near my house and heard raps sounding three at a time several times, as he walked up Stannus Street. I told Mr. C. about a young man having coins received by him thus strangely. As usual, he made no answer, and never subsequently expressed the slightest desire to question the receiver of them on the subject. There is not a day passes, but I have experience in psychic phenomena, and this very morning I was in a shop, and the head clerk, who is an enthusiast in hockey playing, was practising on the main floor with the junior clerk and their attention was taken up by their play. I was standing close to the head clerk. There was no one else in the shop except the firm's driver, and he

was in another part of the store. He is an Irishman, a Roman Catholic, and a medium, and is frightened at what he has previously witnessed in this store. At twenty-five minutes to nine, a working man's mitten fell out of the air in front of the head clerk. I picked it up, and he said that he had never seen it before. In less than a minute afterwards, the mate of this mitten fell on the floor out of the air, about six feet from this young man to his left. Both times these mits fell just as with both hands on Mr. H——, he was about to lift the puck. I saw the mittens in the air about four feet up, as they descended. It is idle for any one to talk of trickery, under the circumstances. Within three minutes in all, these mittens, a small roll of zinc, with a string around it, and a small tree wedge of iron fell to the floor, while the two clerks were playing their game, and the driver was where he could not possibly have thrown anything without being observed. I had known that occasionally there were things thus moved in the store, but within the last fortnight, these occurrences have greatly increased there, accompanied also at times with an audible voice from the cellar. I have reason to believe that Stanford White has been manifesting here, if so, he told me that Mrs. Thaw's evidence is true, and that Thaw would not be convicted. I really must stop. I very much regret the illness of your housekeeper, and trust it did not terminate fatally, and that ere long you will be able to come to Windsor.

Again, sincerely yours,

P. S.—Of course all names in this and signed to statements previously sent, are confidential.

REPORT OF A PERSONAL INVESTIGATION INTO THESE PHENOMENA.

By Hereward Carrington.

At the request of Dr. Hyslop, I undertook the personal investigation of the poltergeist phenomena occurring in the town of Windsor, Nova Scotia. The accounts of the phenomena, which I had had the opportunity to read before my trip, were of such a nature as to render a prompt and careful investigation imperative. The apparent care and caution of the reports, together with the fact that absolute candor and fairness had been preserved; above all the fact that an intelligent person had observed the phenomena for so long a period, only to be more and more convinced;—all this greatly impressed me, and convinced us of the necessity of making a careful and impartial investigation at once. The report struck me as one of the most remarkable that I had ever seen, and as presenting some of the best evidence that I had read for telekinetic phenomena, connected with poltergeist disturbances. I fully understood the nature of the phenomena to be investigated, and the importance of the facts, if established. I also felt keenly the importance of keeping my mind impartial, open and receptive, feeling that a grave responsibility rested upon me, and that the proving of the case or the disproving of it involved gravely important questions, scientifically, and that the investigation was not to be undertaken in any spirit of levity or in any other spirit than that of strict, scientific caution.

I arrived in Windsor, on the afternoon of Wednesday, January 23rd, 1907, having left New York at noon on the 20th. After engaging my room in the hotel, I called on Mr. X., carrying with me the letter of introduction that Dr. Hyslop had given me. I found him out, but left it at the house, together with the request that he call on me at the hotel at his convenience. That evening Mr. X. called, and we retired to my room in order to talk, undisturbed. We had a long talk about the phenomena that had been occurring in the town, and Mr. X. was evidently most anxious

that I should see the phenomena with my own eyes and be convinced in that manner. One had only to talk with Mr. X. in order to perceive at once that he was thoroughly in earnest about the phenomena and that he, at least, believed with his whole heart and soul, in their occurrence. Whether he was the recorder of marvellous facts or the dupe of a clever set of tricksters, there was no question in my mind that he was not himself in any way associated with the production of the phenomena, which he certainly and obviously believed genuine. Mr. X. over and over again made the remark that it was of no use to tell me these things—that I must see for myself, etc.,—all of which rang true.

At the time of the interview Mr. X. struck me as a good recorder of facts but a poor observer of them. I state merely that such was my impression, and I did not allow any such impression to interfere with my judgment of the phenomena—needless to say. Those must be decided on their own value. But personal impressions are sometimes valuable in estimating the character of the man drawing up certain reports—in fact, in some cases, such an interview is most essential.

I found that Mr. X. was very fair in his estimation of the phenomena, and talked freely with me about the possibilities of fraud, though he did not believe it possible in the vast majority of cases that he had observed. He had, however, no notion of the immense *significance* of the facts to which he attested, and talked as freely of "apports," etc., as though they were matters of the most everyday occurrence. He—like almost every other person in this respect—constantly mixed up the phenomena observed and the inferences that might be drawn from the phenomena, when speaking about them. He evidently had no *a priori* objections to their possibility. Mr. X. stated that years ago he had gone deeply into spiritualism, and had mesmerized a number of persons, but that "lately he had given up all that." The most important piece of evidence he furnished me in connection with himself, however, was that he had seen an apparition on several occasions—once very recently; and even as he spoke he stated that he saw a ball of light over my head—thus giving

distinct symptoms of hallucinatory tendency. Mr. X. assured me that I was to place no confidence whatever in anything that was told me by any of the mediums, since they were in a condition of semi-trance the whole time, and in any case "all physical mediums are liars," and no confidence whatever was to be placed in their statements one way or the other. I agreed in this to some extent, though I rather thought that Mr. X. insisted unduly upon this point. He stated that it was possible that many of the mediums might try and assure me that the phenomena were merely tricks, but advised me to pay no attention to their statements, partly for the reason that they were unconscious part of the time of what occurred, and partly because the proprietors of some of the stores feared that their business might be injured or ruined if it became generally known that phenomena of the sort recorded occurred in their stores. I thought this quite possible and rational. Granting that the phenomena occurred, as stated, it was more than probable that such *would* be their attitude in the matter, and I fully sympathized with it. I also agreed that no final conclusions were to be drawn from the statements of any of the mediums, but that all conclusions must be based upon actual observation and personal experience.

Mr. X. and I discussed the best way for me to witness some of the phenomena without my attracting undue attention. We came to the conclusion that the best way out of the difficulty would be for me—at first, at least—to go to the various stores and places where the phenomena were said to occur in his presence, and as his friend—he referring to me whenever necessary, as a friend of his who was interested in these phenomena—and in that manner it was probable that I could see more of the phenomena than if I went alone. Of course I did not think or assume for a moment that this would preclude any investigations that I might care to make on my own account, nor did I think or assume that Mr. X. thought that his suggestion precluded this either. I was to get all the information I could while in his company, and then conduct my inquiries and investigations on my own account as I thought best. That was the thought I had in

mind, at least, and the idea that Dr. Hyslop had in asking me to undertake the investigation. I make these few remarks in view of what followed, and in order to make my position clear.

At 9.30 o'clock the next morning Mr. X. called for me, and we started off on our "tour of inspection." We visited several stores, but the medium seemed to be out, in every case. A general knowledge of the phenomena that were occurring seemed to be about the town, and no special attempt made to conceal the fact that they were occurring. When coming out of one of the shops in which phenomena were reported to have occurred—a butcher's shop—a small boy drove up in a sleigh, and stopped at the door. He was pointed out to me as "the medium" in this case. He stated, in answer to questions, that no phenomena had occurred in the shop that morning, but that 5 o'clock was the best time to observe what did occur. He seemed quite positive about the time of day that phenomena were likely to occur, as though they were more or less under control,—which might argue either way. I had noticed that hardly without exception all the mediums were young men and women between the ages of ten and twenty, with the exception of a few cases, in which the mediums were older. In the greater number of cases, the mediums seemed to be a young boy about eight or nine years of age. They all seemed to be in good health and normal in every way.

After this we went to Mr. X.'s office, and he showed me a number of apports that he had collected at various times. They consisted mostly of matches, Canadian cents, a small stone, rice grains, and the remains of a number of electric light bulbs that had been broken in his presence, he stated—they bursting into a thousand pieces. Mr. X. pointed out to me that, in such cases, fraud would hardly have been employed, since these bulbs are expensive, and hence it was very unlikely that they would have been smashed purposely. I agreed with this, and indeed that fact made quite an impression on my mind at the time. I asked for one or two of these apports to take back with me, and they were promised to me. Of course these apports had no interest in and of

themselves, since the interest, for the scientific world, lies in the discovery of the force that moves the objects and not in the objects themselves. They are merely the objects upon which the force acts. As such, they have no interest whatever, except insofar as they prove the objectivity of the occurrence. The *force that acts* is what science is (or should be) interested in, and in that only.

After leaving Mr. X.'s office, we visited a grocery store on the main street, in which many remarkable phenomena were said to have occurred. The proprietor of this store—who is a very quiet man, subdued and rather secretive—a hard man to get at—stated that two large packing cases had been moved in his store during the night, from their positions in the center of the back room to the rear—a distance of about eight or ten feet. The packing cases weighed about fifteen and twenty pounds respectively. I asked the proprietor, "M," whether he was certain that these cases had been in the center of the back room when he went home the night before. He stated that he was positive such was the case. They were, however, in the rear part of the room in the morning as we now saw them. I asked "M." whether he was the last person to leave at night. He replied "Yes, the last at night, and the first here in the morning." He also stated in answer to questions, that no one had a key to the store except himself. As we were looking at the cases, I happened to look around and saw on the floor an egg which had every appearance of being newly broken. I pointed it out to "M." and Mr. X., neither of whom had noticed it before. "M." stated that it had doubtless been thrown since we had entered that room! Things were beginning to get "warm." I walked across the room and saw a box half full of broken eggs, which "M." stated had been broken "in just the same way." This seemed to bear marks of the genuine, for it is hardly to be supposed that a grocery man would break eggs of his own just for the fun involved in the breaking, or the spirit of fun in tricking some outsider!

We turned and walked back into the front room of the store—the store proper. Mr. X. and I were walking side by side, and the proprietor, "M." was walking behind us, and

distant some five or six feet. While we were thus walking, there occurred the first phenomena it was my good fortune to witness in that haunted town.

We had about reached the center of the store, walking as before stated, when there fell at my feet a large, yellow apple. It had flown past my head, and fell to the floor of the shop, rolling away from me towards the door. I calculated from the direction in which the apple was rolling that it must have come from a certain direction, over my shoulder, and which I could calculate from the direction of the roll of the apple. I turned instantly, to find the proprietor, "M." standing in precisely the place I should have expected to find him, but leaning against the counter with his hands in his pockets, and looking, for some reason, very red in the face. He looked at the apple on the floor in a stolid kind of way, but made no attempt to move until Mr. X. asked "Where did that come from, "M?" "From the window, I guess, ——" replied "M.," advancing and picking up the apple. He advanced with it to the window, as though to place it with the rest of the apples in it, when he found that the apple that had dropped to the floor was unlike any that were in the window, —they being all small red apples, and this one a large, yellow apple, as stated. The proprietor replied, in answer to my question, that apples of that sort were very common in that part of the country, but that he did not remember having any apples of that particular sort in the store at the time. He was very reticent about the phenomena, and was a very hard man to fathom—to get at what he thought of the phenomena that were occurring about him. The incident was certainly interesting, and the feeling that I experienced when the apple fell at my feet I shall long remember! It was the first real phenomenon of the kind I had ever seen, though I had often enough endeavored to see or obtain them. Still, I realized that the phenomenon, while interesting, had no evidential value as it stood. The fact that it might easily have been thrown by the proprietor, and the blank look of astonishment afterwards feigned, was obvious—however unlikely we might think such an interpretation of the facts to be. The direction in which the apple had rolled clearly indicated

that it came from the direction in which he stood, and there was no *physical* objection to the theory that he had done so. Until such phenomena had been rendered *physically* impossible, it was certainly premature to pin any faith in the facts, so long as mere moral presumption stood in the way of believing that they were actually so produced. The phenomenon, while interesting, was not convincing.

We stood talking about the phenomenon for some time, and discussing matters generally, hoping that something more of a similar nature would occur again. But nothing happened. Mr. X. made the remark to me that "that was a little thing, but it will serve to show how utterly impossible it is for such phenomena to be produced by fraud." His mind certainly contrasted strongly with my own on such matters, for I did not consider the phenomenon beyond the bounds of trickery at all; in fact the evidence rather pointed to that interpretation of the fact; but, if the phenomenon were genuine, I considered it of such vast importance that the trip to Nova Scotia would be vindicated and justified by that one fact alone!

After leaving this store, we went to the rattan factory—a wooden structure of three stories, the second and third floors being used for store rooms, while all the actual manufacturing was conducted on the first floor. There were several young men employed in this factory, seven, I think. I never remember seeing them all at one time, and was informed that one of them was away, "home, sick." Generally, only two or three were visible at one time, though, in the majority of cases, the objects moved were in places where it would have been impossible for the men to have been, without detection; and, in fact, it was easily seen that they were not there. However, I anticipate.

Mr. X. and I entered the factory. Nothing occurred for the first few minutes, and I had a chance to chat to the young men employed about the place. They seemed to be in a semi-dazed state, though whether this condition was anything abnormal or was merely country stupidity—accentuated, perhaps by contrast with the acuteness of the New

York boy—I was unable to say. They discussed the phenomena that had been occurring in the factory with the utmost freedom, and apparently wished to furnish all the information possible. The first impression I received was decidedly favorable, since they all appeared to be transparently honest, and to take a genuine interest in the phenomena, as well as rather fearing them.

I went upstairs to the second floor of the factory, and looked about me. It was evidently used as a store room for the chairs, etc., that were made downstairs, these being piled up in heaps. While I was upstairs I heard three loud, metallic knocks on the other side of the factory. I went over in that direction, and found a number of steam-pipes against the wall of the building. As these ran through the floor down to the ground floor, where the young men employed in the factory were, the phenomena were certainly inconclusive, as, if struck from below, the sound would travel up the pipes. Certainly, I could not assert that the sounds *were* produced in this manner, as the sounds, if produced in a genuine, supernormal manner, might have been struck on the pipes; but, as I said, the phenomena were inconclusive, at the very least. While close to the pipes, and listening intently, I heard three more blows struck upon them, and this time there was no mistaking their origin. They were doubtless upon the pipes, and were struck with some metal tool or instrument. A moment later, I heard someone move downstairs, directly below the spot to which the pipes led, and, a moment later, I heard the steps of someone walking away. At this moment Mr. X. came up to the spot where I was standing, and we went together to the third floor of the factory. I noticed that the young man who accompanied us through the factory always remained behind us a few seconds before following us upstairs. The fact may have had no especial significance, but was worth noting, I thought.

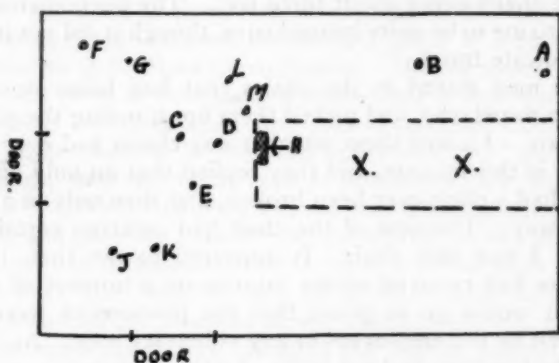
When we were on the third story of the factory, we heard three very loud bangs or knocks upon the wall of the factory, which was built of wood. The knocks were undoubtedly objective, but had no evidential value, for the reason that

they were produced on the wall of the building near some spot where the young men were located, and we had no means of seeing what they were doing. Again we heard the knocks—still more loudly given—against the side or wall of the factory.

As we three (Mr. X., the young man who was showing us through the factory, and myself), were descending to the second floor, we heard a muffled voice calling out "halloo" from somewhere on the second floor. The voice struck me as decidedly suspicious, as it had a very earthly sound, as though it were shouted through a tube of some sort; and what doubled my suspicions was the fact that the man who accompanied us laughed and remarked "gee whiz" to himself, under his breath. However, this may have been amazement at the sportiveness of the spirits, and I accordingly determined not to let this fact interfere with my judgment of the phenomena, on the whole.

When we reached the ground floor, and were standing talking, we heard a loud bang, and, on looking round, I saw, on the floor, a large piece of iron, weighing, I should say, five pounds. It was in the center of the floor of the factory, and about eight or nine feet from anyone. The piece of iron was smooth, and might very well have been used as a tool of some sort. It was stated to me that it did not belong to the factory, and that no one of them had ever seen it before. Unfortunately, from the position I occupied at the time, I could not see one of the men, who sat sheltered behind a big pile of chairs and other furniture in the middle of the floor. I subjoin a diagram in order to make the positions clear. X X is the pile of furniture in the center of the floor. The piece of iron was found at B. Mr. X. was standing at C; I at D, both of us facing the man at E, with whom we were talking, and consequently both of us had our backs to the spot where the phenomenon occurred.

There was, however, a man seated at A. It will be observed that it was impossible for either of us to see him from our positions. The following diagram will make the matter clear:



I said nothing about the phenomenon at the time, but I afterwards learned that they had told me an untruth in stating that the piece of iron did not belong to the shop, since it was being used the next day by the man sitting at A. The use to which it was being put clearly indicated that it was a regular tool, and not a mere makeshift. This, then, would seem to indicate falsehood; but I did not let it influence me in the least, since I had actually seen nothing in the way of actual fraud. My judgment was still in suspense.

I examined the piece of iron, and struck the floor and the walls of the building with it. The sound exactly resembled the blows or knocks I had heard when upstairs. While there was no proof that the blows actually had been struck by this piece of iron, the indications were certainly that they had been caused in that manner. At all events, the phenomena were so far inconclusive.

Mr. X. and I then walked towards the rear part of the factory, and had about reached the points indicated as J and K in the diagram when a pile of chairs, at H, suddenly tumbled down onto the floor. Probably as many as five or six chairs fell in this manner. I did not stop to count them at the time, as I was busy calculating the distance between the chairs and the men nearest to them. There were two men standing at L and M respectively, both of whose backs were turned, when I looked around,—the distance between them

and the chairs being about three feet. The phenomenon appeared to me to be quite inconclusive, though it did not in any way indicate fraud.

The men stared at the chairs that had fallen down in rather a dazed way, and picked them up, standing the pile on end again. I asked them whether any chairs had ever been broken in this manner, and they replied that on only one occasion had a chair ever been broken, and then only in a very minor way. The arm of the chair had received certain injuries. I saw this chair. It appeared to me that, if the furniture had received severe injuries on a number of occasions, it would go to prove that the phenomena were not produced by the employees in any voluntary way. As, however, the furniture had not received any such injuries—except on the one occasion in question, which might have been an accident—it left the matter open, to be determined by other considerations. We then left the factory, promising to return at 3 o'clock, when, it was stated, the phenomena were the most violent.

I find it hard to indicate clearly the state of my mind at this time. I was certainly on the fence with regard to the interpretation of the phenomena, and did not know what to believe. Certain facts seemed to indicate fraud, but, again, certain other facts seemed to point in the opposite direction—one of the strongest of these being the apparent honesty of the men engaged in the establishment. To the reader of this report, it may appear more or less obvious that fraud was practised throughout, but when one witnesses the phenomena themselves, and when phenomena of the sort are occurring around one on every hand, the mind gets into a more or less dazed condition, which it is impossible to avoid. A sense of the mysterious and the awesome enters into one, and partially paralyzes the powers of observation. Added to this, was the fact that I desired, above all things, to keep my mind open to any interpretation of the phenomena, and especially wished to avoid forming any too rapid conclusion as to the nature of the phenomena witnessed. Impartial investigation needs, above all else, a clear and open mind, and that I determined to preserve at all costs.

At 3 o'clock in the afternoon we returned to the factory. Immediately we entered the door, a piece of iron—a large spike—fell to the floor in front of us. No one appeared to be near this piece of iron, though there were several men standing about within three or four feet of the spot where it fell, and we had not, so far, had the opportunity to "get the lay of things," and take in the relative positions of the men on the floor. Certainly, the phenomenon was startling, occurring as it did, and gave me opportunity to actually *see* the object fall—so seldom witnessed at first hand in poltergeist cases—since I saw the object actually fall to the floor of the building. It did not appear to move slowly through the air, however, but naturally, as though falling in the regular manner. This occurred when we were on the doorstep, and about to enter the building.

We entered. Hardly had we done so, however, when a barrel rolled toward us, impelled by some unseen agency, from a direction somewhere in our rear. I could not exactly tell whence the barrel came, but the general direction indicated that it had come from a spot where two men were standing. Soon after this two or three coins fell from the air directly at our feet. Sometimes we could see and hear the coins falling, at other times, we could not, but would find the coins upon the floor of the factory. These coins varied in size and character. Some of the money was current coinage—Canadian quarters, dimes, etc.—and at other times there were old or out of the way coins. I brought back four of these coins with me. They are: (1) A George III half-penny, date 1783. The coin is very battered looking, thickly coated with copper rust, and looks as though it had been eaten into by acid at one time or another. (2) A copper coin exactly the same size as the last, but so old and worn that it has been found impossible to find any date or mark on the coin even by the aid of powerful magnifying glasses. It is thinner than the first coin, and is undoubtedly covered with copper rust of a genuine character. Were it not for this fact, we might be justified in asserting that the "coin" was nothing more than a piece of copper, cut out by a machine, and covered with dirt. However, the coin has no value, in all

probability, even if genuine, owing to its condition. (3) A United States cent piece, from which the head had been cut. I knew that this was frequently done—in order to make scarf pins of the Indian's head—the remainder of the cent being, of course, valueless after this has been done. It was while examining this cent that the credulity of Mr. X. was first forcibly brought home to me,—he making the remark that it was in all probability intended to be symbolic of F— H—, the murdered man from whose body the head had been removed! I must confess that my respect for Mr. X.'s judgment vanished from that moment. (4) A coin, the size of an American cent, upon which was written "Good for one tune." It was a "plug" issued by companies who open penny-in-the-slot-machine halls, and is used instead of circulating actual money. It is worth nothing at all, since it is only good for that purpose, and is equivalent to 1 cent, at most. All the actual money that dropped was claimed and pocketed by the men at work in the factory—who might, perhaps, be entitled to it on any theory of the phenomena.

I now come to the most interesting part of these phenomenal happenings. I ascended to the second floor of the building, Mr. X. slightly behind me, the man who was showing us the building behind him. I had a clear view of the whole floor, and could see that no one was on that floor. As I was looking about, Mr. X. grasped my arm, and whispered "There, you want to see objects moving without contact; see those chairs?"—indicating a pile of rattan rocking chairs that stood in front of us. I looked at them, and sure enough there were the chairs rocking away as though some spirit were indeed occupying them, and was engaged in rocking himself comfortably to sleep! No human being was near the chairs, and I actually saw them *start* in their movement, and the movements of the chairs increase in violence while I was looking at them. I shall never forget the feeling that went through me at that moment! "Eureka," I exclaimed to myself, "at last I have seen a poltergeist in active operation! My trip to Nova Scotia has not been for naught, even though I see nothing else while I am here. I have seen objects move without human contact—and, better

still, I have seen them *start* that movement while my eyes were upon them! What satisfaction!" While thinking in this manner, I was advancing towards the chairs in question, and was regarding them critically, but (I confess) delightedly. I got onto my hands and knees, and examined the chairs from all directions and points of view, but I could not get to the back of the chairs, since others were piled up behind them solidly. I crawled in beneath a number of chairs, in order to get a view of the back of the rockers that were behaving in this remarkable manner. Ah! What was that? A *string* was attached to one of the chairs, and, carried over several other chairs, disappeared through a hole in the floor! Away went my visions of genuine poltergeist phenomena,—of personal evidence of telekinesis,—fraud stood confessed, detected! A whole ingenious system of trickery was evidently in operation that it now became my duty to unearth and detect.

During this time other phenomena had occurred in other quarters. A large iron nail had been thrown, and as I came from beneath the pile of chairs, fell to the floor of the factory. I could not see whence it had come, and, as there were now two or three men on the floor of the factory with us, no value could be attributed to this occurrence. Mr. X., I found, was sitting on a chair in the middle of the room, and was conversing, freely, with a spirit voice! This "voice" was distinct and decidedly human, though muffled and "far away" sounding, and it was hard to tell the exact location of the voice. It replied to Mr. X., answering his questions, etc. At the moment I approached Mr. X., I heard the sound of smothered laughter (*i. e.*, the "spirit voice" was laughing) at which several of the men laughed also. For a few moments, I could not determine the source of the voice; then, passing behind a pile of furniture, I saw a rubber speaking tube passing over, then under, a pile of furniture, and through a hole in the floor to the room below. I listened to the "voice" passing up this pipe for some moments, then returned, to find Mr. X. still conversing. Later, I discovered that the mouth-piece of this speaking tube had been wrapped up in two gunny sacks in order to

muffle the sound of the voice, and make it sound distant, and far away. Again, trickery of a systematic character was patent, and had been detected in active operation.

Shortly after this raps and thumps were heard, but these were certainly inconclusive for the reason that they might have been caused by the men on the ground floor,—by knocking on the steam pipes, sides of the building, etc. As nothing more seemed to be forthcoming, we went down to the main floor, where the rest of the men were at work.

Mr. X. had previously told me that several of the men were, from time to time, "controlled" and at such times mistook him for some one else. I had at least supposed that this part of the testimony was valid, especially as Mr. X. had told me that he had, at one time, mesmerized a great number of persons, and so, it was to be supposed, knew when a person was in a genuine and when in a feigned trance or abnormal condition—or at least be enabled to see the obvious distinctions. In this, however, I was again to be disappointed. While we were on the ground floor, one of the men pretended to be "controlled," and mistake the identity of Mr. X., addressing him as Mr. ——. He was corrected, but persisted in stating that he was right, and that Mr. ———, and not Mr. X., was present. The fraud was obvious. The fellow went through his part with a broad grin on his face, and the men around him were also laughing, and taking the whole thing as a huge joke.

After watching this foolery for some time I walked away in disgust, and walked towards another part of the factory. Hardly had I turned my back when a pile of chairs fell to the floor with a crash, but this time I turned quickly enough to see the hand of one of the young men retreating quickly to his side, after pushing down the pile of chairs. I pretended not to notice this, however, and did not let my eye rest on this man for any length of time, turning at once to the chairs, as though they were the objects of interest. While examining these, I kept my eye on the other men, and saw one of them push a row of chairs that were suspended from a beam in the ceiling. The result was to set this row of chairs into motion—they swinging to and fro

like so many pendulums. I continued examining the chair, however, as though I had not noticed this action, and probably a quarter of a minute elapsed before several of the men exclaimed that the row of chairs hanging from the ceiling was in motion. They had, in the interval, drawn a little away from the chairs, so that they were now probably six or eight feet from them. I expressed due astonishment at the "phenomenon," and assumed an air of the utmost credulity. This was fortunate, since they relaxed their precautions to a great extent, and, thence forward, I was enabled to see nearly every movement made by them, and the *modus operandi* of every phenomenon produced. On several occasions I saw them throw coins and tools and other small articles about the factory. In the case of the coins, the method pursued was this. One of the men would attract the attention while the other would flip the coin into the air. By the time the coin reached the floor, the hands of the person throwing the coin would be securely tucked in his pockets or held in plain view, and his back turned to the spot where the coin fell. The whole thing was very cleverly arranged, and I do not wonder that the fraud had not been detected before by one who was unused to the modes of trickery employed, and the psychology of deception.

I could not account for some of the apports, however, for a long time—many of the objects seeming to fall in parts of the factory where no person was standing, and at times when I had not observed any movement on the part of any of the persons present. By an accident, I happened to discover the means by which these phenomena were brought to pass. Letting my eye sweep the room, in a quick glance, I saw a head quickly bobbing down behind a wooden partition built out along one wall side of the factory. This partition was open at one end, and had a small trap-door cut in one side about a foot square, and it was through this hole that the objects had been thrown. I had seen the head through this hole, and just disappearing below it. It was obvious that many objects could be thrown, under these circumstances, when no one of those standing about moved in the slightest degree, and in parts of the factory where no

one was standing. I did not let anyone see by my actions, however, that I had seen anything out of the ordinary, nor that I suspected the presence of the man behind the wooden partition. I determined to test the matter in another way. Walking in a leisurely manner toward the back of the factory, as if to see whether any new phenomena had occurred in that direction, I walked back along the other wall of the factory, and in such a manner that I could see behind the wooden partition. Behind it, kneeling on the floor, I saw a young man, and beside him a number of pieces of iron, slats of wood and other articles, intended, doubtless, to constitute "apports" at some later time. I continued my walk, still pretending that I had discovered nothing, but determined to keep the corner of my eye on that opening, no matter what phenomena were occurring elsewhere. As I rejoined the rest of the group, standing about the window, a coin instantly fell at my feet. I had not observed anyone throw it on this occasion, but I had often before, and I frequently did afterwards, so I attributed no importance to the phenomenon, for the reason that I was not watching the men as closely as I was intent on keeping my eye on the trap-door opening, for, if I could discover any object actually thrown through this hole in the wall, it would confirm my previous suspicions, and explain many of the phenomena that could not be explained on any other theory. A moment later, I saw the end of a long piece of wood carefully and noiselessly thrust through the opening, and a moment later it went spinning along the floor with a tremendous noise and scuffle. Fraud again stood confessed, detected, and enabled me to explain all the phenomena that had hitherto puzzled me as to their explanation. The men at once ran over to the object and expressed their astonishment at the "marvel." I noticed that they enlarged upon everything that transpired, and tried to make it appear more marvellous than it really was. They all doubtless knew the tricks that one of their number was playing, and all the evidence went to show that they were "with him" in the production of the phenomena; yet, to look at them and to listen to their talk, no one would have the slightest suspicion but that they

were genuinely amazed, nor would he suspect that such simple country fellows could act out their parts so well. It certainly surprised me, and forced me into the conclusion that, if men of that character care to lie, they can do so in a manner that will never be suspected, and that no faith at all is to be placed in the old notion that "the simple country man or woman is to be trusted, for the reason that they are incapable of making-up or consistently acting out the part they have made up their minds to play." My experience seems to completely refute that idea.

Immediately after the phenomenon of the piece of wood, above mentioned, I saw a pile of chairs move along the floor, as though of their own accord. I went up to the chairs, as though to examine them, and observed a long piece of string, connecting them and passing through the entire pile to the other side of the factory, where it had doubtless rested in the hand of one of the men connected with the factory. At all events, there was the string, which, in itself, constituted a positive proof of fraud. At a later period, I saw this string pulled taut just before the pile of chairs moved.

Just about this time, I noticed that one of the men slipped out of the back door, without telling us where he was going, nor the reason for his withdrawal. About a minute later, there came a loud knock on the floor overhead, instantly followed by the sound of chairs falling onto the floor. "There," said Mr. X., "there, you hear loud and definite noises upstairs, yet there is no one there. How do you account for that?" I replied by stating that I should like to go up alone and investigate, which I did. I knew that Mr. X. had seen that man go out of the rear door as well as I had, but evidently did not connect the two events, and paid no attention to that fact—not considering it worth his notice, apparently. This struck me as a very pretty case of mal-observation, in which persons may be in other parts of the house at the time that certain phenomena are occurring—yet the witnesses neglect to take that fact into consideration when drawing up the report of the events. I was getting to have more and more sympathy for Mr. Podmore's treatment of these poltergeist cases, and to appreciate more than ever,

how all-important the recognition of such defects is in the recording of such cases. The fact that one man had disappeared, silently, a few moments before the phenomena took place on the floor above us was, to me, a most suspicious factor, and I desired to see whether it was possible to reach the floor over our heads by other means than by the stairway, which had been, throughout, in our view. That was the reason I desired to go alone.

As I began to ascend the stairs, the door at the rear of the factory opened and our missing man reappeared. He looked rather red in the face, and was smiling broadly. Mr. X., meanwhile, arose from his chair, and went to the rear part of the factory for some purpose. As I ascended the stairs the heavy door between the second and third stories banged against the wall of the factory several times—apparently of its own accord. This was one of those large doors that lie flat, parallel with the floor, hinged at the side, and supported by counter weights, hanging at the end of ropes that pass over pulleys;—the idea being that the door, while opening upward, would lie flat until pushed against the wall of the factory by the hand, where it would then remain, supported by the counter-weights.

This door was banging against the side wall of the factory in an unaccountable way. As I ascended the stairs, I noticed that one of the counter-weights had been removed, and that, instead of the rope having any weight at all attached to it, it merely passed through a hole in the floor, to the ground floor, below. It was evident, therefore, that the door could be moved, banged against the wall, etc., by pulling the rope from some spot on the ground floor directly beneath the rope. This would pull the rope taut and, if the pull were continued, would pull the door against the wall of the factory with a bang. All that I had to find out, therefore, was whether this rope was pulled from below or not. As I could not be above and below at the same moment, this was, however, a matter of greater difficulty than might at first sight be imagined.

On arriving at the third floor, then, I pulled this door down behind me, leaving me alone on that floor. The two

ropes, supporting the door, were now stretched at an angle of about 45° from the edge of the door to the pulleys on the wall. One of these ropes was taut, having the counter-weight attached to the other end, but the second rope was slightly sagging, since the counter-weight had been removed. I lent over, and pushed this rope in, so as to make it take a decided curve or loop. My thought was this. If the door moves of itself, the door will move *first*, and will bang against the side of the house without this rope being pulled taut. If, on the other hand, the door is banged against the side of the house by means of the rope which pulled it in that direction,—which rope, as I had found, passed through a hole in the wall to the ground floor,—then there would be proof that the door was moved by means of the rope, and that that was the force that moved the door. It would prove, *i. e.*, that the door did not move through other means than this one—the pulling of the rope. I accordingly watched the rope intently, and in a few moments, I saw the rope pulled taut with a jerk before the door moved at all. It was obvious, therefore, that the door had been pulled against the side of the building by means of the rope; and since this rope passed to within reach of the hands of those on the ground floor, it did not require much stretch of the imagination to picture the means by which the door had been moved.

When I again descended to the ground floor, I found that a piece of iron had fallen in my absence. Mr. X. asked one of the men whether he could pick it up and he replied “certainly.” “Try it,” said Mr. X., upon which the fellow stooped down and pretended to be unable to lift up the piece of iron—which weighed, probably, three or four pounds. The fraud was obvious. He was smiling broadly when pretending his inability to pick up the piece of iron, as were all the other men in the circle looking at him. Mr. X. had talked freely about his former ability to “mesmerize” people and they had heard him make this assertion on more than one occasion. It is more than probable that this little piece of acting was merely to flatter Mr. X.’s vanity, and to convey to him the impression that he had not yet lost his “power.”

During the time that I had been in the factory, a chair

had fallen over several times, and I knew that no hair nor thread was attached to it because I had, on one occasion, picked the chair up and set it on its feet again, apparently out of courtesy, but really to ascertain whether or not any such thread was attached to it. I therefore knew that, unless some telekinetic force was operative, someone must have kicked or pushed the chair over—though I was unable to see anyone do so for a long time. I had suddenly turned on several occasions, immediately after the chair had fallen to the floor, but did not detect anyone pushing it over. There was one man in the neighborhood, distant about six or seven feet, but he had his back to the chair, and there were no indications that he had kicked it over. There was one occasion on which I had practically detected him in fraud, it is true. I turned my back on him, purposely, but *listened* intently. I knew that he must take at least one step to reach the chair, in order to kick it over, and I determined to wait for that sound. In a few moments I heard a sharp quick step in his direction, and a second later there was the sound of the chair falling onto the floor. I turned quickly, but this man was again busy at the bench. Although the circumstances were extremely suspicious, therefore, I had not actually detected the men in fraud, and I would not let my discovery warp my judgment until I had.

A little later I *saw* him push the chair over, however. Coins and other articles were falling about—several of which I saw thrown—and a large barrel fell off a shelf,—(which I did not see thrown, but it was of no evidential value for the reason that several men were standing about, and neither Mr. X. nor myself were in the neighborhood). The chair, before referred to, had fallen over once or twice, and one of the men had volunteered the remark that “that chair never stands up anyway; it’s always falling over.” There were so many things happening all the time that it was really impossible to pay strict attention to all parts of the factory equally, and hence I was not enabled to watch the chair and the man behind it as I should have liked. However, later on, I managed to see him in the act of kicking over the chair. A coin had fallen at my feet, and I stooped down to pick it up. I

was, in this position, enabled to see between my two legs, and to observe what was happening in the rear. While in this position, I saw the man behind me suddenly take a quick step, kick over the chair, and instantly return to his bench. The whole action was very quickly and very dexterously done, and took but a second to perform. This was almost the last phenomenon that I had not actually *seen* produced at one time or another, and so felt confident in asserting that *all* the phenomena that occurred in our presence had been fraud and nothing but fraud. There remained to be explained the phenomena that had occurred on the second floor when no one was supposedly there—on the occasion that I had seen the man make his exit through the back door. It remained to be seen whether or not there was any other way onto the roof—other than the stairway proper. I went up to the third story, accordingly, and looked out of the window in the rear of the factory. I saw that there was a sort of shed built out from the rear of the factory, and reaching to within a couple of feet of the window of the second story of the building, so that it would be possible for anyone to get onto the roof of this shed by means of a step ladder or other means and enter the window of the second story through the window. Once in the second story, it would have been an easy matter to reach the third story undetected, by means of the stairway.

I was now entirely satisfied that all the phenomena that I had witnessed at the factory that day were fraudulent, and the strings, threads, speaking-tubes, etc., showed that the trickery had been systematically planned and carried out for a long period of time, and that there was every reason to believe that nothing but trickery had been practiced from first to last. For a long time it had gone undetected, it is true, and it had taken me a whole morning and a part of the afternoon to get into the "swing of things," so to speak, though I am thoroughly familiar with all the various methods of trickery that are employed in such cases, as a rule, and was constantly on the watch to detect it, if any existed. Several times, during the investigation, I was very strongly impressed with the close similarity of this case to that re-

corded by Mr. Myers in *Proceedings S. P. R.*, Vol. VII., pp. 384-93, in which chips of wood, tools, and other small articles were thrown about a factory by some unseen power. Both sets of phenomena occurred in a sort of work-shop; in both cases very much the same sort of phenomena occurred, and in many ways the phenomena bear striking resemblances. But I shall not insist that the case quoted by Mr. Myers is therefore due to fraud, nor even that we should look upon that case with greater suspicion than formerly. I merely wish to point out the fact that the two cases are in many respects very similar. And during the course of the phenomena I was constantly reminded of that fact.

I found that I veered considerably towards Mr. Podmore's method of thinking of, and dealing with, these phenomena during this period of first-hand investigation. Here was a case admirably reported by an intelligent man—the phenomena occurring in several quarters of the town simultaneously, and actually continuing in the presence of an S. P. R. member! (An almost unprecedented case!) The phenomena were of the usual type, and the case was, in many respects, far superior to many other poltergeist cases that have been recorded in the history of psychical research. Since this case had so far proved to be fraud and nothing but fraud, disclosing trickery of a systematic type, it certainly became highly probable that all the other phenomena that had occurred in that town were also fraudulently produced; and the case as a whole also helped to cast a strong shadow of suspicion on all the other poltergeist cases of a similar type, for the reason that this one—so much better attested and recorded than they—had turned out to be (so far at least) fraud and nothing but fraud.

I had resolved, however, that the discovery of fraud in the factory should not prejudice me against the rest of the phenomena that had been recorded as occurring in the town. It was quite possible, I argued, that some of the phenomena that had occurred might have been genuine, though those that had occurred at the factory were obvious frauds. I was perfectly open to be convinced, that is, if any new phenomena occurred that seemed to have any basis in fact. I agreed

to v
new
fact
thin
rela
fear
my
adm
com
to a
phen

intro
of th
ring
of th
that
to th
of th
know
was
wink
their
regar
some
been
see th
inviti
and v

T
distan
by sic
X. sa
talkin
the fl
exam
way h
me.

* T
at King

to visit other places in the company of Mr. X., and see if any new phenomena were forthcoming. We accordingly left the factory, and proceeded down the road. I did not say anything to Mr. X. about the conclusion to which I had come relative to the factory phenomena, for the reason that I feared he would refuse to accompany me further if I stated my mind at that time; and, further, I was perfectly open to admit that new phenomena of a genuine sort might be forthcoming, and I wished to see these phenomena before coming to a decided opinion as to the nature of the whole of the phenomena recorded.

At the corner of the street we met two boys, who were introduced to me as Dan O—— and B. M——. I had heard of them before from Mr. X., remarkable phenomena occurring, it was claimed, in their presence*. They spoke openly of the phenomena, did not attempt to deny any of the stories that were told about them, but, on the contrary, rather added to them. I noticed that they smiled whenever they spoke of the phenomena, however, and frequently smiled at me in a knowing way, when Mr. X. was not looking, as though I was to be taken into their confidence! If one can express a wink in a smile, they assuredly did so! From a study of their manner at the time I came to the conclusion that they regarded the whole thing as a joke, and that they were in some way playing tricks upon Mr. X.—as schoolboys have been known to do before, I believe! However, I desired to see the phenomena for myself, if possible, and, upon Mr. X. inviting them up to his office, they accepted his invitation, and we four went up the stairs—I at least somewhat eagerly.

The two boys sat on chairs opposite one another, and distant about four feet. Mr. X. and myself sat on chairs side by side, so that we four made the corners of a square. Mr. X. sat close to M—— and I next to Dan O——. We sat talking for some minutes, when Mr. X. rose, walked across the floor, and returned to my side, standing by me while I examined an "apport" he had brought me to see. In this way his back was turned towards M——, while he was facing me. I took particular pains not to look at M—— but at Mr.

* These are the two from whose hands the dictionary had been snatched, at King's College (see p. 469).

X., while he was talking to me, but I could, at the same time, keep the corner of my eye on M——, and see every movement that he made. I saw him rock backward in his chair, his right hand being in his coat pocket. At a moment when I was apparently absorbed in conversation with Mr. X., I saw his right hand shoot out suddenly, and, at the same instant, he set up a most unearthly yell! Our eyes were at once turned in his direction, naturally, and we found that he had risen to his feet, and had started to prance about the room, kicking over articles of furniture, grinding his teeth, and acting as one "possessed." Now I knew what was the matter. Here was one of the cases of "possession" that Mr. X. had mentioned to me, as occurring in these students. I had earnestly desired to witness a case of this "possession," and my wish had been gratified! But I had not neglected to notice that, at the instant this young man was "possessed," and one second after his arm had shot out in the manner described, there had fallen at the opposite side of the room a small package—an "apport" which had fallen to the floor at the instant he was supposedly "controlled." I had suspected as much. The fact that he had slipped his hand in his pocket and leaned back in his chair so as to be hidden from me where I sat; the fact that his arm had shot out at the moment he was controlled, led me to form the instantaneous conviction that he had at that instant thrown the article across the room, and had screamed at the same moment in order to distract our attention from this movement on his part. Every act in the well-planned drama had previously been studied out, and acted with remarkable cunning and ingenuity. And now he was "possessed," and it remained to be seen how much of the genuine there was about this "possession."

In the few moments that had elapsed while I was examining the "apport," (which proved to be a paper bundle about two inches square, tied with a string), Mr. X. had managed to capture M—— and was now holding him with his two hands on his forehead, over which he was making mesmeric passes! I have previously spoken of the fact that Mr. X. rather prided himself on his ability to mesmerize certain

persons, and that this fact was very generally known throughout the community. As he made these passes, then, the boy pretended to become subdued and passive, ceasing the frantic gestures in which he had formerly indulged. I studied the lower part of his face, while these passes were being made, and noticed that he was smiling to himself, and every now and then would look out from under his eye-lids and exchange smiles and glances with young O——, who stood near. There was not the slightest doubt in my mind, from my observations, that the whole process was one of trickery, and that nothing but fraud was present in this so-called case of "possession."

A little later these two young men left the office, and I did not see them again. M—— made the remark to Mr. X., as he went out of the office—"I'm afraid of you, Mr. X."—evidently in joke. A little later loud knocks were heard on the wall of the office, the wall dividing it from the next office. In that room there were several young men and women at work, and as they knew of Mr. X.'s interests and weaknesses, obviously no value can be attached to knocks obtained under such circumstances.

Soon after this I left Mr. X.'s office and went down the street to get shaved, and incidentally to interview the barber in whose shop extraordinary occurrences were said to have taken place. While being shaved, I asked the barber what truth there was in the various stories that were being circulated about the town—objects being moved without contact, etc., etc. He laughed heartily upon my asking the question. The proprietor of the shop stated that his assistant was more or less of a sleight-of-hand man, and would frequently flip coins and other small objects into the air, when Mr. X. was not looking, and, by the time they had reached the floor, everyone would be busily occupied. This agreed with my own observations in the factory. They stated that there was no truth whatever in any of the stories that were being circulated about the town, and that no phenomena of a genuine nature had occurred so far as they knew—certainly none in their store, where all the phenomena had been fraudulently produced. They stated that they would

have no objection at all to stating that the phenomena were genuine if they were so; in fact they would be more than anxious to see such phenomena themselves; but that all the phenomena produced in their store were fraudulent, they knew, and they thought that all the phenomena that had occurred elsewhere in the town were produced in the same manner also. They further stated that they had, on several occasions, stated to Mr. X. that the phenomena had been produced by fraud, but that he had refused to believe them, stating that it would have been impossible for them to produce the phenomena under the conditions present; that he had watched them all the time, and they had not moved, etc., etc. The assistant, whom I also interviewed, stated exactly the same thing in other words, and fully corroborated the statements of his employer. Needless to say no phenomena occurred while I was in the shop.

I now returned to Mr. X.'s office, and we went together to a small stationery store, where, it was asserted phenomena of a remarkable nature had occurred. When we entered, there were present three young women—one of them employed in the shop, and the other two friends of hers. The three were standing together, talking, behind the counter. The medium, who, in this case, was supposedly a small boy about eight years of age, was absent, but we were told that he would soon be back, and we decided to wait. While doing so, a small paper-weight fell to the floor behind the counter, and a few moments later, an ink-stand or some similar object also fell. In reply to inquiries, the young woman asserted that she had not thrown them. A few moments later, her two friends went out, and she walked towards us, still behind the counter. She then stated that she had thrown the objects, and that the movements we had just observed were due to fraud. She stated that, so far as she knew, *all* the phenomena that had ever been observed in that store were also due to fraud, and that none of a genuine nature had ever occurred. This Mr. X. refused to believe! In spite of the fact that this young woman stated that she had actually thrown the objects, Mr. X. refused to believe that she had done so until she had positively assured him

that such was the case, and had practically demonstrated to him the possibility of producing them in that manner! He had asserted that they could not have been produced by fraud; that he was watching her all the time, etc., etc. Of course, against such extreme and absurd credulity it is impossible to launch the shafts of scepticism! If a person *will not* believe that fraud has been practised, when the possibility of it has been made apparent, and when we have the statements of the persons producing it that it *was* so produced, what are we to do?

I called this young woman across the room on the pretext of asking her a question about the magazines in the window, and, when we were alone, I asked her what truth there was in the various stories that were current, as I had previously asked the barber. She replied that it was all fraud, so far as she knew; that the whole town was "in to trick" Mr. X., since he was a public mark, in a way, and that certainly all the phenomena that had occurred in that store in the past has been produced by fraudulent means. "It is a shame," she said, "the way they fool poor old ——. Everyone makes fun of him, and it must have been the means of his losing much business, too." She stated that she thought there had been about enough trickery, and that she, at least, would practise it no more. This confirmed the statement of the barber, and was to receive still further support, as we shall see.

Just as we finished speaking, the door opened, and the medium entered. He was a small boy, about eight years of age, who smiled broadly when he saw Mr. X. We talked to him for a few moments, and, while Mr. X. was in another part of the store, I asked the boy to tell me truthfully whether or not the phenomena had been produced fraudulently by him. I stated that I did not care whether the phenomena were genuine or false; that I should never see him after that day; that he need not be afraid of telling me the truth, etc. He thereupon stated frankly that he had produced all the phenomena himself, by fraud. He offered to show me how he did the tricks later on. At this point Mr. X. returned. He asked the boy whether or not he had

performed any tricks on previous occasions. The boy was evidently frightened at the manner in which this question was asked, and stated in reply that he had not; that the phenomena were genuine, etc. It must be remembered that he had just that minute stated to me that he *had* so produced them, and this gave me a very good idea of the value of the testimony that Mr. X. was likely to secure in this case. Evidently, all the mediums were so deeply involved in their deceit that it was now impossible for them to withdraw with grace. They were in the mire so deeply that there was no longer any escape for them. Mr. X. was evidently entirely satisfied in the boy's statement that he had not produced the phenomena by fraud, and did not question him further.

Soon after this, Mr. X. returned to his office, and I told him that I was going to conduct some further investigations on my own account. We accordingly separated; he to go to his office, and I to the grocery store which we had first entered, and in which the boxes were stated to have been moved; in which the apple fell in my presence, etc. I found the proprietor a very intelligent man; and I thought it best to state to him, frankly, the object of my mission, and to obtain from him the exact details of the cases he mentioned, if genuine, or to obtain his confession, if fraudulent. I must confess that I was, at that time, inclined to doubt whether any phenomena had been genuine at all, but I wished to obtain all the testimony possible on all points before coming to a final conclusion. For that reason, I visited the store in question, and obtained the interview with the proprietor.

I asked him about the apple incident. He smiled, and stated that "of course" he had thrown it. The story of the boxes having been moved in the night had been made up "out of whole cloth." The eggs had been broken in shipment, and had been collected in one box, previous to their being thrown away. He stated to me the fact that Mr. X. "would believe anything;" that often his assistant had thrown articles when Mr. X. was actually looking at him, yet he had been undetected! He stated that, on one occasion, his assistant, was standing behind the counter to the right of the shop, and distant from Mr. X. about twelve feet. From this

angle he had thrown two apples so as to fall just in front of Mr. X.—who asserted, nevertheless, that they had fallen from the air *directly over his head*, and had not been thrown from any angle at all. This is most instructive. The same thing had occurred on another occasion with a book that had been thrown—Mr. X. asserted that it had fallen at his feet “out of the air,” directly over his head. He also volunteered the remark that Mr. X. had frequently been told that the phenomena were all fraudulently produced—even by those that had produced them, but that he had refused to believe it. He stated that the whole town was “in to fool ——” and that they had had lots of fun doing so! It must be remembered that it was a small country town, in winter, and, doubtless, time sometimes fell heavily upon their hands. No genuine phenomena had occurred in his store, he assured me, though he would not hesitate to tell me if they had done so.

I remarked that I should think it would involve a lot of time and trouble to keep up such a systematic campaign of fraud, so consistently carried out. I stated that I should think that it would involve time, trouble and even expense—since in one case, at least, it was reported that electric light bulbs had been broken, and these cost money when purchased anew. He replied that it required the expenditure of very little time and trouble, for the reason that Mr. X only came into the store for a few minutes at a time, every day or so, and it required very little effort to throw an apple or an orange or some similar small article; and, if they were busy, nothing of the sort would occur! It only took a moment, and would involve no expense. As to the electric light bulbs, these had never been broken in his store, but always in the presence of a policeman by the name of C——. These electric light bulbs had been in his house for some time, and were bulbs that had been “burnt out” and consequently ruined and useless. A number of these had been put aside for some time, and, when Mr. X was about to pay his visit, C—— would drop one or two of these bulbs into his pocket, and throw them down at some opportune moment,—they bursting into a thousand pieces. This interpretation of the

facts was certainly rational, and most probable. I tried to interview this man three times before I finally left the town, but was unable to find him on any occasion. Taking the facts of the case into consideration, however, it need hardly be claimed that this omission is serious, since the explanation offered is quite capable of covering all the facts, and, in view of the systematic fraud that I had discovered in every direction, I felt fully justified in thinking that they had actually been produced in that manner.

I asked this man about the voice that had been heard in the hogshead. He replied that that "was easily explained." It happened in this manner. It was one windy, cold day. The sidewalks and streets were covered with ice, and a high wind was blowing. Two young men were playing together in the alley, at the back of the store, which alley runs at right angles to the main road. One of these men pushed the hogshead at the other, who avoided it, with the result that it went sailing down the slippery alley-way, carried by the wind, and across the street, continuing on its way until it was stopped by a telegraph pole, on the opposite side of the road. Just as it was skimming across the street, Mr. X happened to be passing by, and his eye fell upon the barrel, moving at a rapid pace across the street without visible means of contact! The young men, meanwhile, fearing that the hogshead might strike a horse or some passer-by, had run indoors, and were hence invisible to anyone looking up the alley. Mr. X. had instantly come to the conclusion that here was a most remarkable phenomenon, since on looking up the alley way, he had found no one. He instantly came to the conclusion that spirits had moved the hogshead! The two young men came out of the store, and he questioned them about it. Naturally they stated that they knew nothing of the matter—lying to him as they have frequently done since. In order to carry on the deception further, they arranged for a small boy to creep into the hogshead when Mr. X was not looking, and groan, and state that he was ———, (a man who had committed a recent murder, and of whom I have previously spoken). I asked 'M.' why it was that Mr. X. had not looked inside the hogshead at the time, and he re-

plied that he was too much afraid to do so! The other men pretended to be afraid, also in order to keep up the deception. This idea—that Mr. X was too frightened to investigate the inside of the hogshead himself—I would not have credited had it not been that I had had very similar examples of his credulity and fear in my own presence. Thus, when the raps occurred on the walls of his office (see above, p. 507), Mr. X. was too frightened to go into an empty room or office next to his, in search of the possible cause of the sounds. In the factory, I had frequently noticed that he was afraid to go up to the second or third floors alone, but would only go in the presence of one or two other persons. The men in the factory also told me that this was the case. (See below.) And, such being the case, I think we need have no difficulty in conceiving the explanation of all the extraordinary phenomena connected with this barrel mystery. Since we know that Mr. X. was too frightened to look inside; since we know the cause of the initial movement of the barrel; since the inability to lift the barrel was probably pretended, merely, in the same manner that the inability to lift the piece of iron was pretended (p. 501); and since we know that the witnesses in the case lie frequently, and think nothing of it, I think we need have no hesitation in attributing the incident to clumsy trickery, aided, perhaps, by almost inconceivable credulity.

After leaving this store, I went up to one of the stores in the town where, it was asserted, many strange things had occurred. I interviewed all the clerks there, every one of whom confessed that trickery had been practiced, and that nothing but trickery had ever been practiced in that store. They laughed heartily, when I told them of my mission, and asserted that I must have been "pretty credulous" to accept the statements of Mr. X., "being the sort of man he was." I replied that I had no notion of the character of the man reporting the facts, before investigating the case—having to judge solely by the report, which was very well written. They confirmed the statements I had received in every other quarter, agreeing in all details. They stated that, in their own case, they had "cut up" so much, when Mr. X.

had entered the store, that the proprietor had threatened them all with a summary discharge unless the trickery was instantly stopped. Needless to say, no phenomena were observed after that date! Mr. X. had made himself so obnoxious, as well as conspicuous, it appears, that the managers of the store had forbidden him entrance, and indeed Mr. X. stated to me that I should have to do my own investigating in that store, as he could not accompany me thither. He did not like even to pass the store. At all events, the phenomena promptly ceased after the threat of dismissal, and have never returned.

When I left this store, I walked across to the rattan factory. I was anxious to obtain the confessions of these men, as well as all the others I had interviewed. I found that they also took the whole matter as a joke, and never treated the phenomena as other than the result of trickery for an instant. I told them plainly that I had discovered the strings, the wires, the speaking-tube, etc., and stated that I merely wanted their confessions that all the phenomena had been produced by trickery—or the reverse statement, if such were the truth. When I told them that I had discovered the speaking tube, *e. g.*, they said: "Oh, you saw the speaking tube, did you?" I then obtained from them a complete confession that all the phenomena I had observed, and all the others that had ever happened in that factory, had been fraudulently produced, stating that the whole town was "in the game," and in other ways confirming the statements I had received from others. "I'll tell you how this whole thing commenced," said one of the men to me. "We knew Mr. X's. interest in these things, and one day, as he passed the door, one of the men opened it and called out — (his name) as loud as he could. — — jumped so high (indicating a height of about four feet from the ground) and came in, asking if any of us had called out. Of course we replied that we had not, and he came to the conclusion that F— H— (the murderer) had called to him! This gave us an idea, and we followed that up, until we had this whole system rigged up that you see. I guess you saw how everything was worked, pretty well."

I replied that there was one point I should like explained to me. Where did they get the old coins that had been thrown on the floor, and why did they throw them away, since they might have some money value? They replied that one of the men had had the coins in his possession for a number of years, and that, even if they had any value, they were of no use to him, since no one in that community cared for them, and he did not know the address of any firm to whom he might send them, in order to sell the coins. Since they were useless he thought 'they might just as well be thrown away as kept.' I think this solves the difficulties of the coins—since all American or Canadian money that had fallen to the floor had been pocketed by the men, here as elsewhere.

Summing up, now, the evidence that I had been able to gather in this case, it appears to me perfectly obvious that fraud and nothing but fraud is the good and sufficient explanation of all the phenomena that occurred in connection with the case. Not only did I get the confessions of every one of the persons who had been instrumental in the production of the phenomena, but I had actually detected trickery in three cases, and found that all the indications pointed to it as the explanation of the fourth case, which was the only other case in which I had witnessed any phenomena, and here I obtained a subsequent confession. In no case had the phenomena been, apparently, beyond the bounds of trickery to produce. Every person connected with the phenomena in any way had immediately stated, upon being asked, that nothing but fraud had been employed, and evidently looked upon the case as one long, huge joke. Taken in connection with the indications of mal-observation, credulity and implicit faith in the trustworthiness of the "mediums" and the clear indications of fear of the phenomena, I think we need not stretch our imagination very far when we come to the conclusion that fraud is the explanation of every one of the phenomena that have been recorded in connection with this case. As a final word, I wish to impress upon my readers the fact that I did not form my conclusions on any statements that had been made to me, either for or against

the genuineness of the phenomena, but kept my mind open till the very end. I let all personal and other considerations pass, and based my conclusions upon what I had actually *seen* with my own eyes. While I consider that the confessions I gathered are very valuable as confirmatory evidence, I did not base my conclusions upon those in any sense of the word, but solely upon the trickery that I had seen and actually detected myself. Since the mediums in this case had proved themselves such liars—to use a forcible but expressive and true term—I knew that no faith was to be placed in their confessions one way or the other, and was quite willing to base my conclusions on what I observed alone. When, however, I saw the phenomena being fraudulently produced, what conclusion are we to come to but that the so-called phenomena were due to trickery and to naught else? My conclusion is, therefore, that fraud and trickery is the complete explanation of all the phenomena witnessed or recorded in this case, which I was requested by Dr. Hyslop to investigate.

Reply to Mr. X's Criticism.

I shall try to make my reply as brief as possible. Mr. X. evidently took great umbrage at my leaving Windsor on such short notice, and at the fact that I conducted a number of inquiries in person and without his knowledge. I also regret that my leave-taking was not more ceremonious and courteous, but that was a matter that could not be helped, and is inseparable from certain occasions—especially where the trains run only twice a day! As to the question of personal and private investigation: I never suspected for a moment that Mr. X. would object to such a course on my part, nor did Dr. Hyslop intend that I should be in any way bound to confine my investigations solely to what occurred in the presence of Mr. X.; and I myself felt that any such investigation would be a farce—especially after I had seen Mr. X., and had an opportunity to observe his extreme credulity. There was no reason whatever why I should so have confined myself, and I am sure Mr. X. would have raised no

objections on that score if he had found that my report had been favorable instead of the reverse. As I said, any such inhibited investigation would have been little short of farcical—especially in view of the conditions that I found prevailing at the time.

Mr. X. has the advantage over me in this controversy, since his name is kept private. However, I shall not attempt to answer any of the personal abuse in this place, merely confining myself to the evidence in the case, since I do not feel that any such extended defense is called for. My book should indicate clearly the sympathy I have for physical, and especially telekinetic, phenomena, when these have any claim whatever to serious consideration. But when these "phenomena" have been detected in the very act of being fraudulently produced; when the method of their production has been actually *seen*; when every one of those who produced the phenomena confessed to the fact that they had produced the phenomena by fraudulent means; above all, when personal knowledge of the man reporting the phenomena gave the impression that his statements could not in any way be trusted, for the reason that he was so credulous that his observations and reports were worth absolutely nothing,—what are we to conclude but that systematic fraud, on the one hand, and extreme credulity, on the other, are, combined, sufficient to explain all the "phenomena" that occurred in this town—provided that no facts occurred that could not be explained in this manner? And no such evidence was forthcoming* It was only natural that I should not want to remain a number of days in a place where nothing further of interest was to be evoked, and only natural that I should not want to expend a great amount of time and money in stenographically recording accounts of a number of such fraudulent "phenomena" as I had witnessed. That I was sympathetic enough at the beginning is shown from Mr. X's. own account, quite apart from any statements of mine in that direction. However, I shall waste no more time and

* I subsequently had the two coins I found on the floor valued: they were stated to be of practically no value at all—owing to their condition.

space in discussing this aspect of the problem, but will get down to facts.

It is unnecessary for me to dwell at any length upon the phenomena observed in the rattan factory, and in the grocery and other stores where phenomena were observed, for reasons my report should render obvious. Fraud was detected—positively detected in active operation—in two cases, and rendered highly probable in the other cases, from the inconclusive nature of the phenomena, and the attendant circumstances. When we add to this fact that the confessions were obtained in every case—confessions which agreed absolutely as to the nature and initiation of the phenomena; what are we to conclude but that fraud and only fraud was operative in these cases?

Mr. X. places himself in a ridiculous position, it seems to me, when he starts with the assumption that "all physical mediums are liars," and constantly assured me of that fact (stating to me that "I could put no faith whatever in what was told" me) and yet, in his reports, frequently speaks of these very same mediums as "persons in whom I have complete confidence" and bases his belief upon the written statements of these very persons! If they are so absolutely untrustworthy; if they are in a state of semi-trance, as Mr. X. asserts they are, what reliance can be placed in their statements either to me or himself? and what is the use of obtaining their signatures to documents detailing the occurrences? Certainly Mr. X. did not believe them to have any value, tho he took great pains to obtain them! But I myself have found that they would deliberately falsify the accounts in order to carry out a previously concocted story. They were, in the first place, *acting* a lie throughout, in pretending that the phenomena were genuine when I had found that they were, in reality, nothing but fraud,—having detected the fraud, in the process of its production. In the next place, I had heard at least one "medium" confess to me, one minute, that the phenomena produced were fraudulent, and to Mr. X., the next, that they were genuine, in my presence, and knowing that I overheard what he said! Again, after my visiting the factory and one or two of the stores, the

very persons I interviewed denied to Mr. X. that I had been there at all—why, I cannot conceive, unless it be that they desired to continue playing tricks upon him, after my leaving the town. Of course I never stated to anyone that I “never knew” Mr. X.—that is a pure piece of fiction (by one of those “reliable” persons!); I never said anything whatever about any “one-man business,” which is nonsense, so far as I can see; I have never been in Pittsburg in my life, and have no intentions of going, so could not possibly have said that I had been there on any mission whatever; while, as to my being a trance medium—well, well! It was worth the trip to Nova Scotia to learn *that*, at any rate!

But I do not think it necessary for me to answer or even to consider Mr. X's. criticisms and strictures in any detail. I let my own report speak for itself. But as a final word; I wish to impress upon my readers the fact that I did not base my conclusions on any statements that were made to me, either for or against the genuineness of the phenomena, by the “mediums” or by anyone else, but wholly on what I myself saw with my own eyes, and detected at the time. The subsequent confessions I regarded as purely confirmatory, and of no real evidential value in themselves. But when we see the tricks actually being performed—catch the mediums ‘red-handed,’ in the act of committing the fraud; and subsequently find that they are totally untrustworthy persons, not hesitating at any act of fraud or deceit, there seems to me but one—obvious—conclusion to be drawn—*viz.*, that the manifestations reported were totally valueless as evidence of anything but the grossest kind of trickery, knavery and deceit.

HEREWARD CARRINGTON.

BOOK REVIEW.

Metapsychical Phenomena. By J. MAXWELL, Doctor of Medicine, Deputy Attorney General at the Court of Appeal, Bordeaux, France. With a Preface by Charles Richet, Member of the Academy of Medicine, and Professor of the Faculty of Medicine, Paris, and an Introduction by Sir Oliver Lodge. Translated by L. I. Finch. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons, 1905.

This work is a record and discussion of certain phenomena which have usually been called the "physical phenomena of spiritualism." The name has evidently been adopted to avoid conceptions and associations which it is desirable in the investigating stage of such things to escape. They too often beg questions and presumably a descriptive account can be suggested best by such terms as form the title to this book. But the work, apart from the matter which can be treated as an Appendix, excludes psychological phenomena and confines its data to physical events of an apparently supernormal character. Apparently the primary reason for this limitation of the work is the desire to discuss facts which do not *prima facie* suggest a spiritistic interpretation.

The first chapter is devoted to Method and discusses the conditions affecting the production of "metapsychical phenomena." The second chapter deals with "Raps," the third with Parakinesis and Telekinesis, the fourth with Luminous phenomena, the fifth with Psycho-Sensory and Intellectual phenomena, including sensory automatism, crystal gazing, dreams and telepathy, telaesthesia, motor automatism and various allied phenomena. The remainder of the work is a sort of Appendix containing accounts of psychical phenomena.

In its general nature the book is unquestionably the most thorough account of the kind of phenomena involved that has been published in recent years. This is not saying that it is conclusive for any special view of them, as the author himself makes no claim to this effect. He has no definite theory to explain the facts which he thinks genuine, tho he expresses a tendency to certain preferences which indicate a leaning toward subconscious influences. The attitude of mind is thoroughly sceptical and agnostic, and especially toward the spiritistic hypothesis. One of the most interesting and important facts in estimating the author's relation to the facts is his frank admission that the conditions under which the phenomena were produced were not such "test" conditions as the sceptic may require. He has to rely on his general judgment made up by the quantity of his various experiments and facts, and not by any conclusive individual test. This admission adds confidence to his opinion when the claim of demonstration would weaken it. Another admission gives him the same credit. He grants the possibility of his having been hallucinated in some of his most important observations. The fact is that he may not have been

so affected, but it is something to recognize frankly the possible objection which the disbeliever would urge and by which he would be governed when asked to admit facts which at least, seem to contradict all physical laws hitherto accepted.

The primary reason, however, for the present review of the work is the desire to call attention to certain features of psychical research which it seems to the reviewer are most important at this stage of the investigation. There are two or three statements of Dr. Maxwell which seem for various reasons to reverse scientific method in the examination of such phenomena and which it is well to have discussed.

The statement which it is most important to remark is the following. "If," says the author, "I have taken greater interest in material than in intellectual phenomena, it is because they struck me as being more simple and easier to observe." This is followed by the admission that many experimenters are not agreed with him on this matter and that members of the English Society have come to more positive opinions than he. This position of Dr. Maxwell is fundamental to the problem and implies that we should first investigate the physical phenomena. This view, as he states it himself, is based on the alleged simplicity of the facts. This assumed characteristic would lead to the simpler nature of the explanation of them. But it is precisely at this point that I think the issue can be taken.

Of course something can be said regarding the conception of "simplicity" in the case. If we mean that the physical phenomena are less complicated in their nature we might concede the fact, since the description of them does not imply anything regarding their causes or adjuncts. But as we can hardly consider them at all without asking what their relation is to the physical laws with which we are familiar they will appear to be quite as complicated as any other. No doubt the psychical phenomena are associated with a larger number of conditions affecting their character or occurrence, but *per se* they are quite as "simple" as the physical. Hence apparently the conception of simplicity in the author's statement is determined by the supposed easier observation. But the assumed ease of observation has nothing to do with the simplicity of the phenomena, tho it might have something to do with the assurance we could obtain regarding their occurrence as unusual facts.

There are two fundamental difficulties with physical phenomena. The first concerns their apparent character and the second concerns their explanation. They claim to have an occurrence independent of ordinary causes and so are phenomena supposed to take place without physical contact of any human person and without any known physical cause. Apparently it is easy enough to determine when such alleged facts happen. But when we consider the method by which we determine the real and exact character of any phenomenon it will appear that, after all, it

is not so easy to assure ourselves of independent physical phenomena. The method by which we assure ourselves of this independence is what may be called the Method of Isolation or Difference. This means that, if we wish to assure ourselves that a phenomenon does not have a given cause, we must see that it is properly isolated from the ordinary and possible cause. For instance, if we are to be sure that the fall of temperature in a thermometer is not due to radiation from the wall on which it hangs we must separate the fall in time and space from the equivocal conditions under which it may have previously occurred. If we have to choose between sun heat and radiation from the heat in the house to account for the fact we need to isolate the fall from the possible influence of the radiation mentioned. It is the same with all phenomena whatsoever.

Now in the psychological phenomena which constitute the peculiar problem of psychical research it is easier to determine their supernormal character than it is to determine the supernormal nature of the physical. Of course this does not mean that we can determine the exact nature of all the instances that at least superficially claim to be supernormal, but we can with comparative ease determine those which constitute the type. This method of settling the matter is simply one of isolating the phenomena from their most natural causes. This can be done by selecting those instances which represent information acquired by other than sensory processes and that also represent such a removal in time and space from the conditions of imparting it that there can be no doubt about their character. Thus, suppose I have an experiment with an individual in which I am not personally known and in which some incidents of my childhood are told me that were not known to any living person but myself, and that happened thousands of miles away from the place of the experiment. My explanation of such a phenomenon would be very different from the explanation which would be possible if the same facts had occurred next door to me and the subject experimented with had been a contemporary with my life. It might be a fact, that the things told me were no more known to the psychic than in the supposed case, but the circumstances make it clear that all sorts of possibilities would exist in the one case that did not exist in the other. Assuming that fraud and guessing have been thrown out of court, the imagined case involves such an isolation of the phenomenon from the most ordinary explanations that it will be comparatively easy to suppose the supernormal. The causal nexus is not what the ordinary assumptions require and the proximity of those ordinary causes is so excluded that the determination of the character of the facts is easy.

But this is not the case with the physical phenomena in most cases. The proximity of the psychic to the event, both in time and space, exposes their alleged supernormal character to all sorts of doubts, a fact admitted by Dr. Maxwell, at least tacitly,

in the concession that the conditions of his reported facts were not test conditions and that he might have been hallucinated. The phenomena of conscious fraud and possibly of unconscious deception, are so familiar in connection with illusions on the part of the observer that, no matter what the real character of the facts, the claim that they are genuinely independent of ordinary explanation is easily exposed to objections which a greater distance in space would exclude. Suppose, for instance, that raps occurred fifty feet from the psychic and could be unmistakably located rightly as sounds, and that ordinary explanations are excluded by virtue of that distance, we should be much more puzzled to account for the facts than if the location of the raps was two feet distant. The doubt about independence would be much greater in the latter than the former case.

All this is probably truistic, but the criticism is here put forward as a check to the assumption that the physical phenomena are more easily observed than the psychical, especially as a most important feature of the observation must be the associated conditions under which they are presumably phenomena of an extraordinary kind. It is also particularly important to remark that the records of physical phenomena do not show any sufficient evidence of their occurrence in the degree of isolation necessary. Nearly all, if not absolutely all, reported cases represent them as occurring within close range, temporally and spatially, of the psychic supposed to be a condition of their occurrence.

I do not question the importance of investigating real or alleged physical phenomena. It is quite as much our task to estimate their claims to a supernormal character as those of a psychical nature. But I do not think they represent as easy a type for observation as do the psychical. Besides I do not agree with the disposition of many to ascribe the causes to what is called "psychic force," the "subliminal," etc. I should much prefer, as I do, to say that we have no explanation of any rational sort. Explanation assumes a relation to the *known*. "Psychic force" is not anything that is known. At most it can mean nothing more than the facts needing an explanation. It is little better with appeals to the "subliminal."

True explanation, as remarked, involves an appeal to a cause whose nature is well enough known to make the appeal to it intelligible when a new phenomenon occurs. The resemblance between the new phenomenon and those which are actually explained by the assumed cause must be such as to make the appeal natural and more or less self-evident. For instance, if I see a sun-spot it is much easier for me to suppose that it is due to a rift in the photosphere of that body than to suppose it due to a dragon. I have no doubt that a dragon, if it existed, might account for the facts, but we are familiar with the effect of rifts in the clouds on the earth, and so the appeal to "sun-spot" involves the same idea applied to the sun, and becomes intelligible, but more than intelligible, namely, probable, and the assumption

of a dragon would not appear reasonable until its existence under other conditions has been proved. Now "psychic force" is not known to exist in any other relation than the supposed one, and hence can mean nothing more than the facts which are supposed to be explained by it. Of course, it is more respectable to assume this than personality of deceased persons, since science supposes—as a matter of fact without any good reason—that it has explained a phenomenon when it has found its law. I do not mean in this to imply that we have any reason in physical phenomena *per se* to suppose that they can be caused by spirits. On the face of it the hypothesis, if not absurd, is without adequate evidence. What I contend for in such cases is agnosticism. We are not obliged to explain facts. We can investigate them, and when we have ascertained more about them we may venture on explanatory hypotheses.

It may be true that there is a "psychic force" whatever this may mean, and it may be true that physical phenomena can be caused by "subliminal" activities or by "exteriorization" of the soul or subconscious "forces." But such an idea is a pure fabrication and is not easily, if at all, adaptable to a materialistic theory. We have no other phenomena which can be reduced to such a conception. If we could accept the existence of a soul we might resort to such an hypothesis. But until the existence of a soul can be established—and it can be established only by proving survival after death—we have no reason for supposing such dormant or latent functions to account for clairvoyance and physical phenomena. While there is no superficial reason for supposing that spirits cause such phenomena it may be that we cannot find an intelligible cause until we prove the existence of spirits. This view once accepted might lead naturally to suppositions associated with the existence of a soul and functions exercisable under abnormal conditions that might explain the facts without the interposition of spirits, but not without assuming their existence. If a soul exists it is very probable that there are dormant functions which, under favorable conditions, might anticipate an independent existence for their exercise. But however this may be it does not seem that we can obtain any rational explanation of physical phenomena until the psychological problem has been solved. Hence I should place the physical phenomena and their cause subordinate to the psychological.

If then I have any criticism of Dr. Maxwell's work it is just in this respect, namely, that he places the physical phenomena before the psychical in the process of investigation and explanation. I would not minimize the importance of close attention to them, nor would I neglect them to confine inquiry to the psychical, the intellectual in the parlance of Dr. Maxwell. All that I would ask is that we realize the necessity of suspending our explanatory hypotheses until we found some clue or evidence for hypotheses that are scientifically intelligible.

JAMES H. HYSLOP.





Proceedings
OF
The Old American Society
FOR
Psychical Research

Vol. 1. 1885-89.

Price \$2.50 (prepaid)

We have purchased nearly 100 copies of the *Proceedings* of the old American Society before it was merged in the American Branch of the English Society and shall be glad to supply them to any one at the price named. They contain important articles by Prof. Pierce, Prof. Pickering, Prof. Minot, Prof. Royce, Dr. Hodgson, and Prof. James, with a collection of experiments on Telepathy and cases of spontaneous apparitions, premonitions, clairvoyance, etc. Copies can be had by ordering from the Secretary.

THREE USEFUL BOOKS ON PSYCHICAL RESEARCH.

BY EDWARD T. BENNETT, Ass't Sec. of the English Society for Psychical Research, 1882-1902.

THE SOCIETY FOR PSYCHICAL RESEARCH: Its Rise and Progress and a Sketch of Its Work.

Chapters on: The Society for Psychical Research; Telepathy; Suggestion; Hypnotism; Psychic Healing; The Subliminal Self; Apparitions and Hauntings; Evidence of the Existence of Intelligences other than the Living, and of the Reality of Interecommunication.

TWENTY YEARS OF PSYCHICAL RESEARCH: 1882-1901.

Chapters on: Twenty Years of Psychical Research; The Work Accomplished; Evidence of the Phenomena—Groups I, II, III, Conclusions. List of Reference Books dealing with the subject-matter treated.

AUTOMATIC SPEAKING AND WRITING:—A STUDY.

Chapters on: Automatic Speaking and Writing; Communications in which definite facts are stated, or in which information is conveyed unknown by any normal means to the speaker or writer; Communications in which the intelligence claims to give evidence of its identity with a deceased person; Communications, the chief interest of which consists in their Character; The Sources of the Communications; Conclusions; List of Books, etc., dealing with this subject.

We recommend these little books as very useful for conversion purposes: to give persons uninterested or ignorant of the work that has been done in this field. These books can be supplied to members, postpaid, for 40c. each. All orders filled from the offices of the Society, 519 West 149th Street, New York City.